KSUL

KSUL
001762
KSUL

KSUL
001762
KSUL

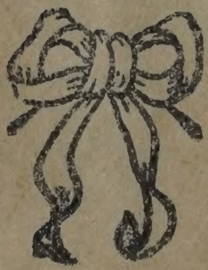
001762

THE COVERLEY PAPERS

FROM

THE SPECTATOR

EDITED
BY
K. Narasimhan, M. A. (HONS.)



BANGALORE
PRINTED BY V. B. SOOBBIAH AND SONS
at the M. B. D. Electric Printing Works
1932

CONTENTS

TJ

PAG
General Introduction ... 1 to
Essays ... 1 to 1
I The Spectator on Himself—Addison ... 1 to
II The members of the Club—Steele ... 5 to
III The aims of the Spectator—Addison ... 11 to
IV Sir Roger at home—Addison ... 15 to
V do Steele ... 19 to
VI Will Wimble—Addison ... 23 to
VII Portrait Gallery—Steele ... 26 to
VIII A Country Scene—Addison ... 30 to
IX Sir Roger in the Church—Addison ... 34 to
X Sir Roger and the perverse widow —Steele ... 38 to
XI On Domestic Economy—Steele ... 43 to
XII On the value of Exercise—Addison ... 47 to
XIII Sir Roger's rural diversions—Budgell ... 51 to
XIV On Witchcraft—Addison ... 57 to
XV Rustic lovers—Steele ... 61 to
XVI Rustic manners—Addison ... 65 to
XVII Instincts in Animals—Addison ... 68 to
XVIII do Addison ... 73 to
XIX Sir Roger at the Assizes—Addison ... 78 to
XX Country heirs—Addison ... 82 to
XXI Periodical essays ... 88 to
XXII On the mischiefs of party spirit —Addison ... 91 to
XXIII do —Addison ... 95 to
XXIV On Women —Addison ... 99 to 1
XXV do —Addison ... 103 to 1
XXVI do —Addison ... 107 to 11
XXVII Sir Roger and the Gypsies—Addison ... 111 to 11

		PAGES
XXVIII	The Spectator's farewell to the Country seat—Addison	... 115 to 118
XXIX	Sir Roger in London—Steele	... 118 to 122
XXX	do —Addison	... 122 to 126
XXXI	Sir Roger in Westminster Abbey —Addison	... 126 to 130
XXXII	do —Budgell	... 130 to 134
XXXIII	Sir Roger at the Threatre—Addison	... 134 to 138
XXXIV	Will Honeycomb—Budgell	... 138 to 141
XXXV	A visit to Spring Garden—Addison	... 141 to 145
XXXVI	Coffeehouse Politicians —Addison	... 145 to 149
XXXVII	The Death of Sir Roger—Addison	... 149 to 15
Notes		... 153 to 261

ote—The motto of each essay is given at the top of the notes.

THE SPECTATOR.

I.

I HAVE observed, that a reader seldom peruses a book with pleasure 'till he knows whether the writer of it be a black or fair man, of a mild or choleric disposition, married r a bachelor, with other particulars of the like nature, that onduce very much to the right understanding of an author. o gratify this curiosity, which is so natural to a reader, design this paper, and my next, as prefatory discourses to y following writings and shall give some account in them the several persons that are engaged in this work. As the ief trouble of compiling, digesting and correcting will fall my share, I must do myself the justice to open the work ith my own history.

I was born to a small hereditary estate, which according o the tradition of the village where it lies, was bounded by he same hedges and ditches in *William* the Conqueror's ime that it is at present, and has been delivered down from ather to son whole and entire, without the loss or acquisition f a single field or meadow, during the space of six hundred years. There runs a story in the family, that when my nother was gone with child of me about three months, she eamt that she was brought to bed of a judge. Whether might proceed from a law-suit which was then depending in the family, or my father's being a Justice of the Peace, I cannot determine; for I am not so vain as to think it presaged any dignity that I should arrive at in my future life, though that was the interpretation which the neighbourhood put upon it. The gravity of my behaviour at my very fir appearance in the world, and all the time that I sucked seemed to favour my mother's dream: For, as she has often told me, I threw away my rattle before I was two months old, I and would not make use of my coral till they had taken away the bells from it.

As for the rest of my infancy, there being nothing in it remarkable, I shall pass it over in silence. I find that during my nonage I had the reputation of a very sullen youth, but was always a favourite of my school-master who used to say, *that my parts were solid and would wear well.* I had not been long at the university, before I distinguished myself by a most profound silence: For, during the space of eight years, excepting in the public exercises of the college, I scarc uttered the quantity of an hundred words; and indeed do n remember that I ever spoke three sentences together in my whole life. Whilst I was in this learned body, I applied myself with so much diligence to my studies, that there are very few celebrated books, either in the learned or the modern tongues, which I am not acquainted with.

Upon the death of my father I was resolved to travel into foreign countries, and therefore left the university, with the character of an odd unaccountable fellow, that had a great deal of learning, if I would but show it. An insatiable thirst after knowledge carried me into all the countries of *Europe*, in which there was anything new or strange to be seen; nay, to such a degree was my curiosity raised, that having read the controversies of some great men concerning the antiquities of *Egypt*, I made a voyage to *Grand Cairo*, on purpose to take the measure of a pyramid; and, as soon as I had set myself right in that particular, returned to my native country with great satisfaction.

I have passed my latter years in this City, where I am frequently seen in most public places, tho' there are not above half-a-dozen of my select friends that know me; of whom my next paper shall give a more particular account. There is no place of general resort wherein I do not often make my appearance; sometimes I am seen thrusting my head into a round of politicians at *Will's*, and listening with great attention to the narratives that are made in those little circular audiences. Sometimes I smoke a pipe at *Child's*; and, while I seem attentive to nothing but the *Post-Man*, overhear the conversation of every table in the room. I appear on *Sunday* nights at *St. James'* Coffee-House and sometimes join the little committee of politics in the inner-room, as one who comes there to hear and improve. My face is likewise very well known at the *Gracian*, the *Cocoa-Tree*, and in the theaters both of *Drury Lane* and the *Hay-Market*. I have been taken for a merchant upon the *Exchange* for above these ten years, and sometimes pass for a *jew* in the assembly of stock-jobbers at *Jonathan's*. In short, wherever I see a cluster of people, I always mix with them, tho' I never open my lips but in my own club.

Thus I live in the world, rather as a spectator of mankind, than as one of the species; by which means I have made myself a speculative statesman, soldier, merchant and artizan, without ever meddling with any practical part in life. I am very well versed in the theory of an husband, or a father, and can discern the errors in the economy, business and diversion of others, better than those who are engaged in them; as standers by discover blots, which are apt to escape those who are in the game. I never espoused any party with violence, and am resolved to observe an exact neutrality between the whigs and tories, unless I shall be forc'd to declare myself by the hostilities of either side. In short, I have acted in all the parts of my life as a looker-on, which is the character I intend to preserve in this paper.

I have given the reader just so much of my history and character, as to let him see I am not altogether unqualified for the business I have undertaken. As for other particulars in my life and adventures, I shall insert them in following papers, as I shall see occasion. In the meantime, when I consider how much I have seen, read and heard, I begin to blame my own taciturnity; and since I have neither time nor inclination to communicate the fulness of my heart in speech, I am resolved to do it in writing; and to print myself out, if possible, before I die. I have been often told by my friends that it is pity so many useful discoveries which I have made, should be in the possession of a silent man. For this reason therefore, I shall publish a sheet full of thoughts every morning, for the benefit of my contemporaries; and if I can any way contribute to the diversion or improvement of the country in which I live, I shall leave it, when I am summoned out of it, with the secret satisfaction of thinking that I have not lived in vain.

There are three very material points which I have not spoken to in this paper, and which, for several important reasons, I must keep to myself, at least for some time: I mean, an account of my name, my age, and my lodgings. I must confess I would gratify my reader in anything that is reasonable; but as for these three particulars, though I am sensible they might tend very much to the embellishment of my paper, I cannot yet come to a resolution of communicating them to the public. They would indeed draw me out of that obscurity which I have enjoyed for many years, and expose me in public places to several salutes and civilities which have been always very disagreeable to me; for the greatest pain I can suffer, is the being talked to, and being stared at. It is for this reason likewise, that I keep my complexion and dress, as very great secrets; tho' it is not impossible, but I may make discoveries of both in the progress of the work I have undertaken.

After having been thus particular upon myself, I shall in to-morrow's paper give an account of those gentlemen who are concerned with me in this work. For, as I have before intimated, a plan of it is laid and concerted (as all other matters of importance are) in a club. However, as my friends have engaged me to stand in the front, those who have a mind to correspond with me, may direct their letters *To the Spectator*, at Mr. *Buckley's*, in *Little Britain*. For, I must further acquaint the reader, that tho' our club meets only on *Tuesdays* and *Thursdays*, we have appointed a committee to sit every night for the inspection of all such papers as may contribute to the advancement of the public weal.

II.

The first of our society is a gentleman of *Worcestershire*, of ancient descent, a baronet, his name SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY. His great grandfather was the inventor of that famous country-dance which is call'd after him. All who know that shire are very well acquainted with the parts and merits of SIR ROGER. He is a gentleman that is very singular in his behaviour, but his singularities proceed from his good sense, and are contradictions to the manners of the world, only as he thinks the world is in the wrong. However, this humour creates him no enemies, for he does nothing with sourness or obstinacy; and his being unconfined to modes and forms, makes him but the readier and more capable to please and oblige all who know him. When he is in town he lives in *Soho-Square*: It is said, he keeps himself a bachelor by reason he was crossed in love by a perverse beautiful widow of the next county to him. Before this disappointment Sir Roger was what you call a fine gentleman. He had often supped with my Lord *Rochester* and Sir *George Etherege*, fought a duel upon his first coming to town and kick'd bully *Dawson* in a public coffee-house for calling him youngster. But being ill-used by the abovementioned widow, he was very serious for a year and a half; and tho', his temper being naturally jovial, he at last got over it, he grew careless of himself and never dressed afterwards; he continues to wear a coat and doublet of the same cut that were in fashion at the time of his repulse, which, in his merry humours, he tells us, has been in and out twelve times since he first wore it. He is now in his fifty-sixth year, cheerful, gay and hearty, keeps a good house in both town and country; a great lover of mankind; but there is such a mirthful cast in his behaviour, that he is rather beloved than esteemed. His tenants grow rich, his servants look satisfied, all the young women profess love to him, and young men are glad of his company: when he comes into a house he calls the servants by their names, and talks all the way up-stairs to a visit. I must not omit that Sir Roger is a Justice of the *Quorum*; that he fills the chair at a quarter-session with great abilities, and three months ago, gained universal applause by explaining a passage in the Game-Act.

The gentleman next in esteem and authority among us, is another bachelor, who is a member of the *Inner Temple*; a man of great probity, wit and understanding; but he has chosen his place of residence rather to obey the direction of an old humoursome father, than in pursuit of his own inclination. He was plac'd there to study the laws of the land, and is the most learned of any of the house in those of the stage. *Aristotle* and *Longinus* are much better understood by him than *Littleton* or *Coke*. The father sends up every post questions relating to marriage articles, leases and tenures, in the neighbourhood; all which questions he agrees with an attorney to answer and take care of in the lump. He is studying the passions themselves, when he should be inquiring into the debates among men which arise from them. He knows the argument of each of the orations of *Demosthenes* and *Tully*, but not one case in the reports of our own courts. No one ever took him for a fool, but none, except his intimate friends, know he has a great deal of wit. This turn makes him at once both disinterested and agreeable: as few of his thoughts are drawn from business, they are most of them fit for conversation. His taste of books is a little too just for the age he lives in; he has read all, but approves of very few. His familiarity with the customs, manners, actions and writings of the ancients, makes him a very delicate observer of what occurs to him in the present world. He is an excellent critic, and the time of the play is his hour of business; exactly at five he passes through *New Inn*, crosses through *Russel Court*; and takes a turn at *Will's* till the play begins; he has his shoes rubb'd and his periwig powder'd at the barber's as you go into the *Rose*. It is for the good of the audience when he is at a play, for the actors have an ambition to please him.

The person of next consideration is SIR ANDREW FREEPORT, a merchant of great eminence in the city of *London*: a person of indefatigable industry, strong reason, and great experience. His notions of trade are noble and generous, and (as every rich man has usually some sly way of jesting, which would make no great figure were he not a rich man) he calls the sea the *British Common*. He is acquainted with commerce in all its parts, and will tell you that it is a stupid and barbarous way to extend dominion by arms ; for true power is to be got by arts and industry. He will often argue, that if this part of our trade were well cultivated, we should gain from one nation ; and if another, from another. I have heard him prove that diligence makes more lasting acquisitions than valour, and that sloth has ruin'd more nations than the sword. He abounds in several frugal maxims, amongst which the greatest favourite is, 'a penny saved is a penny got'. A general trader of good sense is pleasanter company than a general scholar ; and SIR ANDREW having a natural unaffected eloquence, the perspicuity of his discourse gives the same pleasure that wit would in another man. He has made his fortunes himself ; and says that *England* may be richer than other kingdoms, by as plain methods as he himself is richer than other men ; tho' at the same time I can say this of him, that there is not a point in the compass, but blows home a ship in which he is an owner.

Next to SIR ANDREW in the club-room sits Captain SENTRY, a gentleman of great courage, good understanding, but invincible modesty. He is one of those that deserve very well, but are very awkward at putting their talents within the observation of such as should take notice of them. He was some years a Captain, and behaved himself with great gallantry in several engagements, and at several sieges ; but having a small estate of his own, and being next heir to SIR ROGER he has quitted a way of life in which no man can rise suitably to his merit, who is not something of a courtier, as well as a soldier. I have heard him often lament, that in a profession where merit is placed in so conspicuous a view, impudence should get the better of modesty. When he has talked to this purpose, I never heard him make a sour expression, but frankly confess that he left the world, because he was not fit for it. A strict honesty and an even regular behaviour, are in themselves obstacles to him that must press through crowds who endeavour at the same end with himself, the favour of a commander. He will, however, in this way of talk, excuse generals, for not disposing according to men's desert, or enquiring into it: For, says he, that great man who has a mind to help me, has as many to break through to come at me, as I have to come at him: Therefore he will conclude, that the man who would make a figure, especially in a military way, must get over all false modesty, and assist his patron against the importunity of other pretenders, by a proper assurance in his own vindication. He says it is a civil cowardice to be backward in asserting what you ought to expect, as it is a military fear to be slow in attacking when it is your duty. With this candour does the gentleman speak of himself and others. The same frankness runs through all his conversation. The military part of his life has furnished him with many adventures, in the relation of which he is very agreeable to the company; for he is never over-bearing, though accustomed to command men in the utmost degree below him; nor ever too obsequious, from an habit of obeying men highly above him. humble

But that our society may not appear a set of humourists unacquainted with the gallantries and pleasures of the age we have among us the gallant WILL. HONEYCOMB a gentleman who, according to his years, should be in the decline of his life, but having ever been very careful of his person, and always had a very easy fortune, time has made but a very little impression, either by wrinkles on his forehead, or traces in his brain. His person is well turned, and of a good height. He is very ready at that sort of discourse with which men usually entertain women. He has all his life dressed very well, and remembers habits as others do men. He can smile when one speaks to him, and laughs easily. He knows the history of every mode, and can inform you from which of the *French* King's wives our wives and daughters had this manner of curling their hair, that way of placing their hoods; whose frailty was covered by such a sort of petticoat, and whose vanity to show her foot made that part of the dress so short in such a year. In a word, all his conversation and knowledge has been in the female world: As other men of his age will take notice to you what such a minister said upon such and such an occasion, he will tell you when the Duke of *Monmouth* danced at court such a woman was then smitten, another was taken with him at the head of his troop in the *Park*. In all these important relations, he has ever about the same time received a kind glance, or a blow of a fan, from some celebrated beauty, mother of the present Lord such-a-one. If you speak of a young commoner that said a lively thing in the house, he starts up, 'He has good blood in his veins, '*Tom Mirabell* begot him, the rogue cheated me in that affair; 'that young fellow's mother used me more like a dog than 'any woman I ever made advances to'. This way of talking of his, very much enlivens the conversation among us of a more sedate turn; and I find there is not one of the company but myself, who rarely speak at all, but speaks of him as of that sort of man, who is usually called a well-bred fine gentleman. To conclude his character, where women are not concerned, he is an honest worthy man.

I cannot tell whether I am to account him whom I am next to speak of, as one of our company; for he visits us but seldom, but when he does, it adds to every man else a new enjoyment of himself. He is a clergyman, a very philosophic man, of general learning, great sanctity of life, and the most exact good breeding. He has the misfortune to be of a very weak constitution and consequently cannot accept of such cares and business as preferments in his function would oblige him to: He is therefore among divines what a chamber-counsellor is among lawyers. The probity of his mind, and the integrity of his life, create him followers as being eloquent or loud advances others. He seldom introduces the subject he speaks upon; but we are so far gone in years, that he observes when he is among us, an earnestness to have him fall on some divine topic, which he always treats with much authority, as one who has no interests in this world, as one who is hastening to the object of all his wishes, and conceives hope from his decays and infirmities. These are my ordinary companions.

III.

It is with much satisfaction that I hear this great city inquiring day by day after these my papers, and receiving my morning lectures with a becoming seriousness and attention. My publisher tells me, that there are already three thousand of them distributed every day: So that if I allow twenty readers to every paper, which I look upon as a modest computation, I may reckon about three score thousand disciples in *London* and *Westminster*, who I hope will take care to distinguish themselves from the thoughtless herd of their ignorant and inattentive brethren. Since I have raised to myself so great an audience, I shall spare no pains to make their instruction agreeable, and their diversion useful. For which reasons I shall endeavour to enliven morality with wit, and to temper wit with morality, that my readers may, if possible, both ways find their account in the speculation of the day. And to the end that their virtue and discretion may not be short transient intermitting starts of thought, I have resolved to refresh their memories from day to day, till I have recovered them out of that desperate state of vice and folly, into which the age is fallen. The mind that lies fallow but a single day, sprouts up in follies that are only to be killed by a constant and assiduous culture. It was said of *Socrates*, that he brought philosophy down from heaven, to inhabit among men; and I shall be ambitious to have it said of me, that I have brought philosophy out of Closets and Libraries, Schools and Colleges, to dwell in clubs and assemblies at tea-tables, and in coffee-houses.

I would therefore in a very particular manner recommend these my speculations to all well-regulated families, that set apart an hour in every morning for tea and bread and butter; and would earnestly advise them for their good to order this paper to be punctually served up, and to be looked upon as a part of the tea equipage.

Sir *Francis Bacon* observes, that a well-written book, compared with its rivals and antagonists, is like *Moses's* Serpent, that immediately swallow'd up and devoured those of the *Ægyptians*. I shall not be so vain as to think, that where the SPECTATOR appears, the other public prints will vanish; but shall leave it to my readers' consideration, whether, is it not much better to be let into the knowledge of oneself, than to hear what passes in *Muscovy* or *Poland*; and to amuse ourselves with such writings as tend to the wearing out of ignorance, passion, and prejudice, than such as naturally conduce to inflame hatreds, and make enmities irreconcileable.

In the next place, I would recommend this paper to the daily perusal of those gentlemen whom I cannot but consider as my good brothers and allies, I mean the fraternity of Spectators who live in the world without having anything to do in it; and either by the affluence of their fortunes, or laziness of their dispositions, have no other business with the rest of mankind but to look upon them. Under this class of men are comprehended all contemplative tradesmen, titular physicians, fellows of the royal society, templars that are not given to be contentious, and statesmen that are out of business. In short, every one that considers the world as a theatre, and desires to form a right judgment of those who are the actors on it.

There is another set of men that I must likewise lay a claim to, whom I have lately called the blanks of society, as being altogether unfurnish'd with ideas, till the business and conversation of the day has supplied them. I have often considered these poor souls with an eye of great commiseration, when I have heard them asking the first man they have met with, whether there was any news stirring? and by that means gathering together materials for thinking. These needy persons do not know what to talk of, till about twelve o'clock in the morning; for by that time they are pretty good judges of the weather, know which way the wind sits, and whether the Dutch Mail become in. As they lie at the mercy of the first man they meet, and are grave or impertinent all the day long, according to the notions which they have imbibed in the morning, I would earnestly entreat them not to stir out of their chambers till they have read this paper, and do promise them that I will daily instil into them such sound and wholesome sentiments, as shall have a good effect on their conversation for the ensuing twelve hours.

But there are none to whom this paper will be more useful than to the female world. I have often thought there has not been sufficient pains taken in finding out proper employment and diversions for the fair ones. Their amusements seem contrived for them rather as they are women, than as they are reasonable creatures; and are more adapted to the sex, than to the species. The toilet is their great scene of business, and the right adjusting of their hair the principal employment of their lives. The sorting of a suit of ribbons is reckoned a very good morning's work; and if they make an excursion to a mercer's or a toy-shop, so great a fatigue makes them unfit for anything else all the day after. Their more serious occupations are sewing and embroidery, and their greatest drudgery the preparation of jellies and sweetmeats. This, I say, is the state of ordinary women; tho' I know there are multitudes of those of a more elevated life and conversation, that move in an exalted sphere of knowledge and virtue, that join all the beauties of the mind to the ornaments of dress, and inspire a kind of awe and respect, as well as love, into their male beholders. I hope to increase the number of these by publishing this daily paper, which I shall always endeavour to make an innocent if not an improving entertainment, and by that means at least divert the minds of my female readers from greater trifles. At the same time, as I would fain give some finishing touches to those which are already the most beautiful pieces in human nature, I shall endeavour to point out all those imperfections that are the blemishes, as well as those virtues which are the embellishments, of the sex. In the mean while I hope these my gentle readers, who have so much time on their hands, will not grudge throwing away a quarter of an hour in a day on this paper, since they may do it without any hindrance to business.

I know several of my friends and well-wishers are in great pain for me, lest I should not be able to keep up the spirit of a paper which I oblige myself to furnish every day: but to make them easy in this particular, I will promise them faithfully to give it over as soon as I grow dull. This I know will be matter of great raillery to the small wits; who will frequently put me in mind of my promise; desire me to keep my word, assure me that it is high time to give over, with many other little pleasantries of the like nature, which men of a little smart genius cannot forbear throwing out against their best friends, when they have such a handle given them of being witty. But let them remember, that I do hereby enter my caveat against this piece of raillery.

IV.

Having often received an invitation from my friend SIR ROGER DE COVERLEY to pass away a month with him in the country, I last week accompanied him thither, and am settled with him for some time at his country-house, where I intend to form several of my ensuing speculations. SIR ROGER, who is very well acquainted with my humour, lets me rise and go to bed when I please, dine at his own table or in my chamber as I think fit, sit still and say nothing without bidding me be merry. When the gentlemen of the country come to see him, he only shows me at a distance: As I have been walking in his fields I have observed them stealing a sight of me over a hedge, and have heard the knight desiring them not to let me see them, for that I hated to be stared at.

I am the more at ease in SIR ROGER'S family, because it consists of sober and staid persons; for as the knight is the best master in the world, he seldom changes his servants; and as he is beloved by all about him, his servants never care for leaving him; by this means his domestics are all in years, and grown old with their master. You would take his valet de chambre for his brother, his butler is grey-headed, his groom is one of the gravest men that I have ever seen, and his coachman has the looks of a Privy-Counsellor. You see the goodness of the master even in the old house-dog, and in a grey pad that is kept in the stable with great care and tenderness out of regard to his past services, tho' he has been useless for several years.

I could not but observe with a great deal of pleasure the joy that appeared in the countenances of these ancient domestics upon my friend's arrival at his country-seat. Some of them could not refrain from tears at the sight of their old master; every one of them press'd forward to do something for him, and seemed discouraged if they were not employed. At the same time the good old knight, with a mixture of the father and the master of the family, tempered the inquiries after his own affairs with several kind questions relating to themselves. This humanity and good nature engages every body to him, so that when he is pleasant upon any of them, all his family are in good humour, and none so much as the person whom he diverts himself with: On the contrary, if he coughs, or betrays any infirmity of old age, it is easy for a stander-by to observe a secret concern in the looks of all his servants.

My worthy friend has put me under the particular care of his butler, who is a very prudent man, and, as well as the rest of his fellow-servants, wonderfully desirous of pleasing me, because they have often heard their master talk of me as his particular friend.

My chief companion, when SIR ROGER is diverting himself in the woods or the fields, is a very venerable man who is ever with SIR ROGER, and has lived at his house in the nature of a chaplain above thirty years. This gentleman is a person of good sense and some learning, of a very regular life and obliging conversation: He heartily loves SIR ROGER and knows that he is very much in the old knight's esteem, so that he lives in the family rather as a relation than a dependant.

I have observed in several of my papers, that my friend SIR ROGER, amidst all his good qualities, is something of a humourist; and that his virtues, as well as imperfections, are as it were tinged by a certain extravagance, which makes them particularly *his* and distinguishes them from those of other men. This cast of mind, as it is generally very innocent in itself, so it renders his conversation highly agreeable, and more delightful than the same degree of sense and virtue would appear in their common and ordinary colours. As I was walking with him last night he asked me how I liked the good man whom I have just now mentioned, and without staying for my answer told me, that he was afraid of being insulted with Latin and Greek at his own table; for which reason he desired a particular friend of his at the university to find him out a clergyman rather of plain sense than much learning, of a good aspect, a clear voice, a sociable temper, and, if possible, a man that understood a little of back-gammon. "My friend," says SIR ROGER, "found me out this gentleman, who, besides the endowments required of him, is, they tell me, a good scholar, tho' he does not show it. I have given him the parsonage of the parish; and because I know his value have settled upon him a good annuity for life. If he outlives me, he shall find that he was higher in my esteem than perhaps he thinks he is. He has now been with me thirty years; and tho' he does not know I have taken notice of it, has never in all that time asked anything of me for himself, tho' he is every day soliciting me for something in behalf of one or other of my tenants, his parishioners. There has not been a law-suit in the parish since he has liv'd among them: If any dispute arises they apply themselves to him for the decision; if they do not acquiesce in his judgment, which I think never happened above once or twice at most, they appeal to met At his first settling with me, I made him a present of all the good sermons which have been printed in *English*, and only begg'd of him that every *Snnday* he would pronounce one of them in the pulpit. Accordingly, he has digested them into such a series, that they follow one another naturally, and make a continued system of practical divinity.

As Sir Roger was going on in his story, the gentleman we were talking of came up to us; and upon the knight's asking him who preached to-morrow (for it was *Saturday* night) told us, the bishop of St. *Asaph* in the morning, and Dr. *South* in the afternoon. He then shewed us his list of preachers for the whole year, where I saw with a great deal of pleasure archbishop *Tillotson*, bishop *Saunderson*, Doctor *Barrow*, Doctor *Calamy*, with several living authors who have published discourses of practical divinity. I no sooner saw this venerable man in the pulpit, but I very much approved of my friend's insisting upon the qualifications of a good aspect and a clear voice; for I was so charmed with the gracefulness of his figure and delivery, as well as with the discourses he pronounced, that I think I never passed any time more to my satisfaction. A sermon repeated after this manner, is like the composition of a poet in the mouth of a graceful actor.

I could heartily wish that more of our country clergy would follow this example; and instead of wasting their spirits in laborious compositions of their own, would endeavour after a handsome elocution, and all those other talents that are proper to enforce what has been penned by great masters. This would not only be more easy to themselves, but more edifying to the people.

V.

The reception, manner of attendance, undisturbed freedom and quiet, which I meet with here in the country, has confirm'd me in the opinion I always had, that the general corruption of manners in servants is owing to the conduct of masters. The aspect of every one in the family carries so much satisfaction, that it appears he knows the happy lot which has befallen him in being a member of it. There is one particular which I have seldom seen but at Sir Roger's; it is usual in all other places, that servants fly from the parts of the house through which their master is passing; on the contrary, here they industriously place themselves in his way; and it is on both sides, as it were, understood as a visit, when the servants appear without calling. This proceeds from the humane and equal temper of the man of the house, who also perfectly well knows how to enjoy a great estate, with such economy as ever to be much beforehand. This makes his own mind untroubled, and consequently unapt to vent peevish expressions, or give passionate or inconsistent orders to those about him. Thus respect and love go together; and a certain cheerfulness in performance of their duty is the particular distinction of the lower part of this family. When a servant is called before his master, he does not come with an expectation to hear himself rated for some trivial fault, threatened to be stripped, or used with any other unbecoming language, which mean masters often give to worthy servants; but it is often to know, what road he took that he came so readily back according to order; whether he passed by such a ground, if the old man who rents it is in good health; or whether he gave SIR ROGER's love to him, or the like.

A man who preserves a respect, founded on his benevolence to his dependants, lives rather like a prince than a master in his family; his orders are received as favours, rather than duties; and the distinction of approaching him is part of the reward for executing what is commanded by him.

There is another circumstance in which my friend excels in his management, which is the manner of rewarding his servants: He has ever been of opinion, that giving his cast clothes to be worn by valets has a very ill effect upon little minds, and creates a silly sense of equality between the parties, in persons affected only with outward things. I have heard him often pleasant on this occasion, and describe a young gentleman abusing his man in that coat, which a month or two before was the most pleasing distinction he was conscious of in himself. He would turn his discourse still more pleasantly upon the bounties of the ladies of this kind; and I have heard him say he knew a fine woman, who distributed rewards and punishments in giving becoming or unbecoming dresses to her maids.

But my good friend is above these little instances of good-will, in bestowing only trifles on his servants; a good servant to him is sure of having it in his choice very soon of being no servant at all. As I before observed, he is so good an husband, and knows so thoroughly that the skill of the purse is the cardinal virtue of this life; I say, he knows so well that frugality is the support of generosity, that he can often spare a large fine when a tenement falls, and give that settlement to a good servant who has a mind to go into the world, or make a stranger pay the fine to that servant, for his more comfortable maintenance, if he stays in his service.

A man of honour and generosity considers, it would be miserable to himself to have no will but that of another, tho' it were of the best person breathing, and for that reason goes on as fast as he is able to put his servants into independent livelihoods. The greatest part of SIR ROGER's estate is tenanted by persons who have served himself or his ancestors. It was to me extremely pleasant to observe the visitants from several parts to welcome his arrival into the country; and all the difference that I could take notice of between the late servants who came to see him, and those who stayed in the family, was that these latter were looked upon as finer gentlemen and better courtiers.

This manumission and placing them in a way of livelihood, I look upon as only what is due to a good servant, which encouragement will make his successor be as diligent, as humble, and as ready as he was. There is something wonderful in the narrowness of those minds, which can be pleased, and be barren of bounty to those who please them.

One might, on this occasion, recount the sense that great persons in all ages have had of the merit of their dependants, and the heroic services which men have done their masters in the extremity of their fortunes; and shown to their undone patrons, that fortune was all the difference between them;

but as I design this my speculation only as a gentle admonition to thankless masters, I shall not go out of the occurrences of common life, but assert it as a general observation that I never saw, but in Sir Roger's family, and one or two more, good servants treated as they ought to be. Sir Roger's kindness extends to their children's children, and this very morning he sent his coachman's grandson to prentice. I shall conclude this paper with an account of a picture in his gallery, where there are many which will deserve my future observation.

At the very upper end of this handsome structure I saw the portraiture of two young men standing in a river, the one naked, the other in a livery. The person supported seemed half dead, but still so much alive as to show in his face exquisite joy and love towards the other. I thought the fainting figure resembled my friend Sir Roger; and looking at the butler, who stood by me, for an account of it, he informed me that the person in the livery was a servant of Sir Roger's, who stood on the shore while his master was swimming, and observing him taken with some sudden illness, and sink under water, jumped in and saved him. He told me Sir Roger took off the dress he was in as soon as he came home, and by a great bounty at that time, followed by his favour ever since, had made him master of that pretty seat which we saw at a distance as we came to this house. I remember'd indeed Sir Roger said there lived a very worthy gentleman, to whom he was highly obliged, without mentioning anything further. Upon my looking a little dissatisfied at some part of the picture my attendant informed me that it was against Sir Roger's will, and at the earnets request of the gentleman himself, that he was drawn in the habit in which he had saved his master.

VI.

As I was yesterday morning walking with Sir Roger before his house, a country-fellow brought him a huge fish, which, he told him, *Mr. William Wimble* had caught that very morning; and that he presented it, with his service to him, and intended to come and dine with him. At the same time he delivered a letter, which my friend read to me as soon as the messenger left him.

Sir Roger,

I desire you to accept of a Jack, which is the best I have caught this season. I intend to come and stay with you a week, and see how the perch bite in the *Black river.* I observed with some concern, the last time I saw you upon the bowling-green, that your whip wanted a lash to it: I will bring half a dozen with me that I twisted last week, which I hope will serve you all the time you are in the country. I have not been out of the saddle for six days last past, having been at *Eton* with Sir *John's* eldest son. He takes to his learning hugely.

I am,

Sir, your humble servant,

Will Wimble.

This extraordinary letter, and message that accompanied it, made me very curious to know the character and quality of the gentleman who sent them; which I found to be as follows. *Will Wimble* is younger brother to a baronet, and descended of the ancient family of the *Wimbles.* He is now between forty and fifty; but being bred to no business and born to no estate, he generally lives with his elder brother as superintendent of his game. He hunts a pack of dogs better than any man in the country, and is very famous for finding out a hare. He is extremely well versed in all the little handicrafts of an idle man; He makes a *May-fly* to a miracle; and furnishes the whole country with angle-rods. As he is a good-natur'd officious fellow, and very much esteem'd upon account of his family; he is a welcome guest at every house, and keeps up a good correspondence among all the gentlemen about him. He carries a tulip-root in his pocket from one to another, or exchanges a puppy between a couple of friends that live perhaps in the opposite sides of the country. *Will*, is a particular favourite of all the young heirs, whom he frequently obliges with a net that he has weaved, or a setting-dog that he has *made* himself: He now and then presents a pair of garters of his own knitting to their mothers or sisters; and raises a great deal of mirth among them, by enquiring as often as he meets them *how they wear*? These gentleman-like manufactures and obliging little humours, make *Will*, the darling of the country.

Sir Roger was proceeding in the character of him, when we saw him make up to us with two or three hazle-twigs in his hand that he had cut in Sir Roger's woods, as he came through them, in his way to the house. I was very much pleased to observe on one side the hearty and sincere welcome with which Sir Roger received him, and on the other, the secret joy which his guest discovered at the sight of the good old knight. After the first salutes were over, *Will*, desired Sir Roger to lend him one of his servants to carry a set of shuttlecocks he had with him in a little box to a lady that lived about a mile off, to whom it seems he had promis'd such a present for above this half year. Sir Roger's back was no sooner turned but honest *Will*, began to tell me of a large cock pheasant that he had sprung in one of the neighbouring woods, with two or three other adventures of the same nature. Odd and uncommon characters are the game that I look for, and most delight in; for which reason I was as much pleased with the novelty of the person that talked to me, as he could be for his life with the springing of a pheasant, and therefore listened to him with more than ordinary attention.

In the midst of his discourse the bell rang to dinner, where the gentleman I have been speaking of had the pleasure of seeing the huge jack, he had caught, served up for the first dish in a most sumptuous manner. Upon our sitting down to it he gave us a long account how he had hooked it, played with it, foiled it, and at length drew it out upon the bank, with several other particulars that lasted all the first course. A dish of wild-fowl that came afterwards furnished conversation for the rest of the dinner, which concluded with a late invention of *Will's* for improving the quail-pipe. partridge

Upon withdrawing into my room after dinner, I was secretly touched with compassion towards the honest gentleman that had dined with us; and could not but consider with a great deal of concern, how so good on heart and such busy hands were wholly employed in trifles; that so much humanity should be so little beneficial to others, and so much industry so little advantageous to himself. The same temper of mind and application to affairs might have recommended him to the public esteem, and have raised his fortune in another station of life. What good to his country or himself might not a trader or merchant have done with such useful tho' ordinary qualifications?

Will Wimble's is the case of many a younger brother of a great family, who had rather see their children starve like gentlemen, than thrive in a trade or profession that is beneath their quality. This humour fills several parts of *Europe* with pride and beggary. It is the happiness of a trading nation, like ours, that the younger sons, tho' in-

Pride going before a f

capable of any liberal art or profession, may be placed in such a way of life, as may perhaps enable them to vie with the best of their family. Accordingly we find several citizens that were launched into the world with narrow fortunes, rising by an honest industry to greater estates than those of their elder brothers. It is not improbable but *Will*, was formerly tried at divinity, law, or physic; and that finding his genius did not lie that way, his parents gave him up at length to his own inventions. But certainly, however improper he might have been for studies of a higher nature, he was perfectly well turned for the occupations of trade and commerce. As I think this is a point which cannot be too much inculcated, I shall desire my reader to compare what I have here written with what I have said in my twenty first speculation.

VII.

I was this morning walking in the gallery, when SIR ROGER entered at the end opposite to me, and advancing towards me, said, he was glad to meet me among his relations the DE COVERLEYS, and hoped I liked the conversation of so much good company, who were as silent as myself. I knew he alluded to the pictures, and as he is a gentleman who does not a little value himself upon his ancient descent, I expected he would give me some account of them. We were now arrived at the upper end of the gallery, when the knight faced towards one of the pictures, and as we stood before it, he entered into the matter, after his blunt way of saying things, as they occur to his imagination, without regular introduction, or care to preserve the appearance of chain of thought.

'It is', said he, 'worth while to consider the force of dress; and how the persons of one age differ from those of another, merely by that only. One may observe also, that

dress

the general fashion of one age has been followed by one particular set of people in another, and by them preserved from one generation to another. Thus the vast jetting coat and small bonnet, which was the habit in *Harry* the seventh's time, is kept on in the yeomen of the guard; not without a good and politic view, because they look a foot taller, and a foot and an half broader: besides that the cap leaves the face expanded, and consequently more terrible, and fitter to stand at the entrances of palaces.

This predecessor of ours, you see, is dressed after this manner, and his cheeks would be no larger than mine, were he in a hat as I am. He was the last man that won a prize in the Tilt-yard (which is now a common street before *Whitehall*). You see the broken lance that lies there by his right foot; he shivered that lance of his adversary all to pieces; and bearing himself, look you, Sir, in this manner, at the same time he came within the target of the gentleman who rode against him, and taking him with incredible force before him on the pommel of his saddle, he in that manner rid the tournament over, with an air that showed he did it rather to perform the rule of the lists, than expose his enemy; however, it appeared he knew how to make use of a victory, and with a gentle trot he marched up to a gallery where their mistress sate (for they were rivals) and let him down with laudable courtesy and pardonable insolence. I don't know but it might be exactly where the coffee-house is now.

You are to know this my ancestor was not only of a military genius, but fit also for the arts of peace, for he played on the bass-viol as well as any gentleman at court; you see where his viol hangs by his basket-hilt sword. The action at the Tilt-yard you may be sure won the fair lady, who was a maid of honour, and the greatest beauty of her time; here she stands, in the next picture. You see, Sir, my great-great-great grandmother has on the new-fashioned petticoat, except that the modern is gather'd at the waist; my grandmother appears as if she stood in a large drum, whereas the ladies now walk as if they were in a go-cart. For all this lady was bred at court, she became an excellent country-wife, she brought ten children, and when I shew you the library, you shall see in her own hand (allowing for the difference of the language) the best receipt now in *England* both for an hasty-pudding and a white-pot.

If you please to fall back a little, because 'tis necessary to look at the three next pictures at one view; these are three sisters. She on the right hand, who is so very beautiful, died a maid; the next to her, still handsomer, had the same fate, against her will; this homely thing in the middle had both their portions added to her own, and was stolen by a neighbouring gentleman, a man of stratagem and resolution, for he poisoned three mastiffs to come at her, and knocked down two deer-stealers in carrying her off. Misfortunes happen in all families: The theft of this romp and so much money, was no great matter to our estate. But the next heir that possessed it was this soft gentleman, whom you see there: Observe the small buttons, the little boots, the laces, the slashes about his clothes, and above all the posture he is drawn in, (which to be sure was his own choosing); you see he sits with one hand on a desk writing, and looking as it were another way, like an easy writer, or a sonneteer: He was one of those that had too much wit to know how to live in the world; he was a man of no justice, but great good manners; he ruined every body that had any thing to do with him, but never said a rude thing in his life;

the most indolent person in the world, he would sign a deed that passed away half his estate with his gloves on, but would not put on his hat before a lady if it were to save his country. He is said to be the first that made love by squeezing the hand. He left the estate with ten thousand pounds debt upon it, but however by all hands I have been informed that he was every way the finest gentleman in the world. That debt lay heavy on our house for one generation, but it was retrieved by a gift from that honest man you see there, a citizen of our name, but nothing at all a-kin to us. I know SIR ANDREW FREEPORT has said behind my back, that this man was descended from one of the ten children of the maid of honour I shewed you above; but it was never made out. We winked at the thing indeed, because money was wanting at that time.'

Here I saw my friend a little embarrassed, and turned my face to the next portraiture.

SIR ROGER went on with his account of the gallery in the following manner. 'This man (pointing to him I looked at) I take to be the honour of our house.—SIR HUMPHREY DE COVERLEY; he was in his dealings as punctual as a tradesman, and as generous as a gentleman. He would have thought himself as much undone by breaking his word, as if it were to be followed by bankruptcy. He served his country as knight of this shire to his dying day. He found it no easy matter to maintain an integrity in his words and actions, even in things that regarded the offices which were incumbent upon him, in the care of his own affairs and relations of life, and therefore dreaded (tho' he had great talents) to go into employments of state, where he must be exposed to the snares of ambition. Innocence of life and great ability were the distinguishing parts of his character;

the latter, he had often observed, had led to the destruction of the former, and he used frequently to lament that great and good had not the same signification. He was an excellent husbandman, but had resolved not to exceed such a degree of wealth; all above it he bestowed in secret bounties many years after the sum he aimed at for his own use was attained. Yet he did not slacken his industry, but to a decent old age spent the life and fortune which was superfluous to himself, in the service of his friends and neighbours.'

Extra

Here we were called to dinner, and SIR ROGER ended the discourse of this gentleman, by telling me, as we followed the servant, that this his ancestor was a brave man, and narrowly escaped being killed in the civil wars; 'For', said he, 'he was sent out of the field upon a private message, the 'day before the battle of *Worcester*'. The whim of narrowly escaping by having been within a day of danger, with other matters abovementioned, mixed with good sense, left me at a loss whether I was more delighted with my friend's wisdom or simplicity.

VIII.

At a little distance from Sir ROGER'S house, among the ruins of an old abbey, there is a long walk of aged elms; which are shot up so very high, that when one passes under them, the rooks and crows that rest upon the tops of them seem to be cawing in another region. I am very much delighted with this sort of noise, which I consider as a kind of natural prayer to that being who supplies the wants of his whole creation, and who, in the beautiful language of the *Psalms*, feedeth the young ravens that call upon him. I like this retirement the better, because of an ill report it lies under of being *hauntad*; for which reason (as I have been told in the family) no living creature ever walks in it besides the Chaplain. My good friend the butler desired me with a very grave face not to venture myself in it after sun-set, for that one of the footmen had been almost frightened out of his wits by a spirit that appear'd to him in the shape of a black horse without an head ; to which he added, that about a month ago one of the maids coming home late that way with a pail of milk upon her head, heard such a rustling among the bushes that she let it fall.

I was taking a walk in this place last night between the hours of nine and ten, and could not but fancy it one of the most proper scenes in the world for a ghost to appear in. The ruins of the abbey are scattered up and down on every side, and half covered with ivy and elder-bushes, the harbours of several solitary birds which seldom make their appearance till the dusk of the evening. The place was formerly a church-yard, and has still several marks in it of graves and burying-places. There is such an echo among the old ruins and vaults, that if you stamp but a little louder than ordinary, you hear the sound repeated. At the same time the walk of elms, with the croaking of the ravens which from time to time are heard from the tops of them, looks exceeding solemn and venerable. These objects naturally raise seriousness and attention ; and when night heightens the awfulness of the place, and pours out her supernumerary horrors upon every thing in it, I do not at all wonder that weak minds fill it with spectres and apparitions.

Mr. Locke, in his chapter of the association of ideas, has very curious remarks to shew how by the prejudice of education one idea often introduces into the mind a whole set that bear no resemblance to one another in the nature of things. Among several examples of this kind, he produces the following instance. *The ideas of goblins and sprights* *have really no more to do with darkness than light. Yet let but a foolish maid inculcate these often on the mind of a child, and raise them there together, possibly he shall never be able to separate them again so long as he lives; but darkness shall ever afterwards bring with it those frightful ideas, and they shall be so joined, that he can no more bear the one than the other.*

As I was walking in this solitude, where the dusk of the evening conspired with so many other occasions of terror, I observed a cow grazing not far from me, which an imagination that is apt to *startle* might easily have construed into a black horse without an head: And I dare say the poor footman lost his wits upon some such trivial occasion.

My friend Sir ROGER has often told me with a great deal of mirth, that at his first coming to his estate he found three parts of his house altogether useless; that the best room in it had the reputation of being haunted, and by that means was locked up; that noises had been heard in his long gallery, so that he could not get a servant to enter it after eight o'clock at night; that the door of one of his chambers was nailed up, because there went a story in the family that a butler had formerly hang'd himself in it; and that his mother, who lived to a great age, had shut up half the rooms in the house, in which either her husband, a son, or daughter had died. The knight seeing his habitation reduced to so small a compass, and himself in a manner shut out of his own house, upon the death of his mother ordered all the apartments to be flung open, and *exorcised* by his Chaplain, who lay in every room one after another, and by that means dissipated the fears which had so long reigned in the family.

I should not have been thus particular upon these ridiculous horrors, did I not find them so very much prevail in all parts of the country. At the same time I think a person who is thus terrified with the imagination of ghosts and spectres much more reasonable than one who, contrary to the reports of all historians sacred and profane, ancient and modern, and to the traditions of all nations, thinks the appearance of spirits fabulous and groundless. Could not I give myself up to this general testimony of mankind, I should to the relations of particular persons who are now living, and whom I cannot distrust in other matters of fact. I might here add, that not only the historians, to whom we may join the poets, but likewise the philosophers of antiquity have favoured this opinion. *Lucretius* himself, though by the course of his philosophy he was obliged to maintain that the soul did not exist separate from the body, makes no doubt of the reality of apparitions, and that men have often appeared after their death. This I think very remarkable; he was so pressed with the matter of fact which he could not have the confidence to deny, that he was forced to account for it by one of the most absurd unphilosophical notions that was ever started. He tells us, that the surfaces of all bodies are perpetually flying off from their respective bodies, one after another ; and that these surfaces or thin cases that included each other whilst they were joined in the body like the coats of an onion, are sometimes seen entire when they are separated from it ; by which means we often behold the shapes and shadows of persons who are either dead or absent.

I shall dismiss this paper with a story out of *Josephus*, not so much for the sake of the story itself as for the moral reflections with which the author concludes it, and which I shall here set down in his own words. "*Glaphyra* the daughter of King *Archelaus*, after the death of her two first husbands (being married to a third, who was brother to her first husband, and so passionately in love with her that he turned off his former wife to make room for this marriage) had a very odd kind of dream. She fancied that she saw her first husband coming towards her, and that she embraced him with great tenderness; when in the midst of the pleasure which she expressed at the sight of him, he reproached her after the following manner: *Glaphyra*, says he, thou hast made good the old saying, that women are not to be trusted. Was not I the husband of thy virginity? Have I not children by thee? How couldst thou forget our loves so far as to enter into a second marriage, and after that into a third, nay to take for thy husband a man who has so shamelessly crept into the bed of his brother? However, for the sake of our passed loves, I shall free thee from thy present reproach, and make thee mine for ever. *Glaphyra* told this dream to several women of her acquaintance, and died soon after. I thought this story might not be impertinent in this place, wherein I speak of those kings: Besides that, the example deserves to be taken notice of as it contains a most certain proof of the immortality of the soul, and of divine providence. If any man thinks these facts incredible, let him enjoy his own opinion to himself, but let him not endeavour to disturb the belief of others, who by instances of this nature are excited to the study of virtue."

[illegible]

IX.

I am always very well pleased with a country *Sunday*, and think, if keeping holy the seventh day were only a human institution, it would be the best method that could have been thought of for the polishing and civilizing of mankind. It is certain the country-people would soon degenerate into a kind of savages and barbarians, were there not such frequent returns of a stated time, in which the whole village meet together with their best faces, and in their cleanliest habits, to converse with one another upon indifferent subjects, hear their duties explained to them, and join together in adoration of the Supreme Being. *Sunday* clears away the rust of the whole week, not only as it refreshes in their minds the notions of religion, but as it puts both the sexes upon appearing in their most agreeable forms, and exerting all such qualities as are apt to give them a figure in the eye of the village. A country-fellow distinguishes himself as much in the ***Church-yard***, as a citizen does upon the *Change*, the whole parish-politics being generally discussed in that place either after sermon or before the bell rings.

My friend Sir ROGER, being a good churchman, has beautified the inside of his church with several texts of his own choosing: He has likewise given a handsome pulpit-cloth, and railed in the communion-table at his own expense. He has often told me, that at his coming to his estate he found his parishioners very irregular; and that in order to make them kneel and join in the responses, he gave every one of them a hassock and a common-prayer book: and at the same time employed an itinerant singing-master, who goes about the country for that purpose, to instruct them rightly in the tunes of the Psalms; upon which they now very much value themselves, and indeed out-do most of the country churches that I have ever heard.

As Sir ROGER is landlord to the whole congregation, he keeps them in very good order, and will suffer nobody to sleep in it besides himself; for if by chance he has been surprised into a short nap at sermon, upon recovering out of it he stands up and looks about him, and if he sees anybody else nodding, either wakes them himself, or sends his servant to them. Several other of the old Knight's particularities break out upon these occasions: Sometimes he will be lengthening out a verse in the singing-psalms, half a minute after the rest of the congregation have done with it; sometimes, when he is pleased with the matter of his devotion, he pronounces *Amen* three or four times to the same prayer; and sometimes stands up when everybody else is upon their knees, to count the congregation, or see if any of his tenants are missing.

I was yesterday very much surprised to hear my old friend, in the midst of the service, calling out to one ***John Matthews*** to mind what he was about, and not disturb the congregation. This ***John Matthews*** it seems is remarkable for being an idle fellow, and at that time was kicking his heels for his diversion. This authority of the Knight, though exerted in that odd manner which accompanies him in all circumstances of life, has a very good effect upon the parish, who are not polite enough to see any thing ridiculous in his behaviour; besides that the general good sense and worthiness of his character make his friends observe these little singularities as foils that rather set off than blemish his good qualities.

As soon as the sermon is finished, nobody presumes to stir till Sir ROGER is gone out of the church. The Knight walks down from his seat in the chancel between a double row of his tenants, that stand bowing to him on each side; and every now and then enquires how such an one's wife, or mother, or son, or father do, whom he does not see at church; which is understood as a secret reprimand to the person that is absent.

The chaplain has often told me, that upon a catechising-day, when Sir ROGER has been pleased with a boy that answers well, he has ordered a Bible to be given him next day for his encouragement; and sometimes accompanies it with a flitch of bacon to his mother. Sir ROGER has likewise added five pounds a year to the clerk's place; and that he may encourage the young fellows to make themselves perfect in the church-service, has promised upon the death of the present incumbent, who is very old, to bestow it according to merit.

The fair understanding between Sir ROGER and his chaplain, and their mutual concurrence in doing good, is the more remarkable, because the very next village is famous for the differences and contentions that rise between the Parson and the 'Squire, who live in a perpetual state of war. The Parson is always preaching at the 'Squire, and the 'Squire to be revenged on the Parson never comes to church. The 'Squire has made all his tenants atheists and Tithe-stealers; while the Parson instructs them every *Sunday* in the dignity of his order, and insinuates to them in almost every sermon, that he is a better man than his patron. In short, matters are come to such an extremity, that the 'Squire has not said his prayers either in public or private this half year; and that the Parson threatens him, if he does not mend his manners, to pray for him in the face of the whole congregation.

Feuds of this nature, though too frequent in the country, are very fatal to the ordinary people; who are so used to be dazzled with riches, that they pay as much deference to the understanding of a man of an estate, as of a man of learning; and are very hardly brought to regard any truth, how important soever it may be, that is preached to them, when they know there are several men of five hundred a year who do not believe it.

X.

In my first description of the company in which I pass most of my time, it may be remembered that I mentioned a great affliction which my friend Sir ROGER had met with in his youth ; which was no less than a disappointment in love. It happened this evening, that we fell into a very pleasing walk at a distance from his house. As soon as we came into it, 'It is, quoth the good old man, looking round him with a smile, very hard, that any part of my land should be settled upon one who has used me so ill as the perverse widow did ; and yet I am sure I could not see a sprig of any bough of this whole walk of trees, but I should reflect upon her and her severity. She has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world. You are to know this was the place wherein I used to muse upon her ; and by that custom I can never come into it, but the same tender sentiments revive in my mind, as if I had actually walked with that beautiful creature under these shades. I have been fool enough to carve her name on the bark of several of these trees ; so unhappy is the condition of men in love, to attempt the removing of their passion by the methods which serve only to imprint it deeper. She has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world.

Here followed a profound silence ; and I was not displeased to observe my friend falling so naturally into a discourse, which I had ever before taken notice he industriously avoided. After a very long pause he entered upon an account of this great circumstance in his life, with an air which I thought raised my idea of him above what I had ever had before ; and gave me the picture of that cheerful mind of his, before it received that stroke which has eversince affected his words and actions. But he went on as follows.

"I came to my estate in my twenty-second year, and resolved to follow the steps of the most worthy of my ancestors who have inhabited this spot of earth before me, in all the methods of hospitality and good neighbourhood, for the sake of my fame; and in country sports and recreations, for the sake of my health. In my twenty-third year I was obliged to serve as Sheriff of the county; and in my servants, officers and whole equipage, indulged the pleasure of a young man (who did not think ill of his own person) in taking that public occasion of showing my figure and behaviour to advantage. You may easily imagine to yourself what appearance I made, who am pretty tall, rid well, and was very well dressed, at the head of a whole county, with music before me, a feather in my hat, and my horse well bitted. I can assure you I was not a little pleased with the kind looks and glances I had from all the balconies and windows as I rode to the hall where the assizes were held. But when I came there, a beautiful creature in a widow's habit sat in court to hear the event of a cause concerning her dower. This commanding creature (who was born for the destruction of all who behold her) puton such a resignation in her countenance, and bore the whispers of all around the court with such a pretty uneasiness, I warrant you, and then recovered herself from one eye to another, 'till she was perfectly confused by meeting something so wistful in all she encountered, that at last, with a murrain to her, she cast her bewitching eye upon me. I no sooner met it, but I bowed like a great surprised booby; and knowing her cause to be the first which came on, I cried, like a captivated calf as I was, make way for the defendant's witnesses. This sudden partiality made all the county immediately see the Sheriff also was become a slave to the fine widow. During the time her cause was upon trial, she behaved herself, I warrant you, with such a deep attention to her business, took opportunities to have little billets handed to her council, then would be in such a pretty confusion, occasioned, you must know, by acting before so much company, that not only I but the whole court was prejudiced in her favour; and all that the next heir to her husband had to urge, was thought so groundless and frivolous, that when it came to her council to reply, there was not half so much said as every one besides in the court thought he could have urged to her advantage. You must understand, Sir, this perverse woman is one of those unaccountable creatures, that secretly rejoice in the admiration of men, but indulge themselves in no farther consequences. Hence it is that she has ever had a train of admirers, and she removes from her slaves in town to those in the country, according to the seasons of the year. She is a reading lady, and far gone in the pleasures of friendship; she is always accompanied by a confidant, who is witness to her daily protestations against our sex, and consequently a bar to her first steps towards love, upon the strength of her own maxims and declarations.

However, I must needs say this accomplished mistress of mine has distinguished me above the rest, and has been known to declare Sir ROGER DE COVERLEY was the tamest and most humane of all the brutes in the country. I was told she said so, by one who thought he rallied me; but upon the strength of this slender encouragement, of being thought least detestable, I made new liveries, new paired my coach-horses, sent them all to town to be bitted, and taught to throw their legs well, and move all together, before I pretended to cross the country and wait upon her. As soon as I thought my retinue suitable to the character of my fortune and youth, I set out from hence to make my addresses. The particular skill of this lady has ever been to inflame your wishes, and yet command respect. To make her mistress of this art, she has a greater share of knowledge, wit, and good sense, than is usual even among men of merit. Then she is beautiful beyond the race of women. If you won't let her go on with a certain artifice with her eyes, and the skill of beauty, she will arm herself with her real charms, and strike you with admiration instead of desire. It is certain that if you were to behold the whole woman, there is that dignity in her aspect, that composure in her motion, that complacency in her manner, that if her form makes you hope, her merit makes you fear. But then again, she is such a desperate scholar, that no country-gentleman can approach her without being a jest. As I was going to tell you, when I came to her house I was admitted to her presence with great civility; at the same time she placed herself to be first seen by me in such an attitude, as I think you call the posture of a picture, that she discovered new charms, and I at last came towards her with such an awe as made me speechless. This she no sooner observed but she made her advantage of it, and began a discourse to me concerning love and honour, as they both are followed by pretenders, and the real votaries to them. When she had discussed these points in a discourse, which I verily believe was as learned as the best philosopher in *Europe* could possibly make, she asked me whether she was so happy as to fall in with my sentiments on these important particulars. Her confidant sat by her, and upon my being in the last confusion and silence, this malicious aid of hers, turning to her, says, I am very glad to observe Sir ROGER pauses upon this subject, and seems resolved to deliver all his sentiments upon the matter when he pleases to speak. They both kept their countenances, and after I had sat half an hour meditating how to behave before such profound casuists, I rose up and took my leave. Chance has since that time thrown me very often in her way, and she as often has directed a discourse to me which I do not understand. This barbarity has kept me ever at a distance from the most beautiful object my eyes ever beheld. It is thus also she deals with all mankind, and you must make love to her, as you would conquer the sphinx, by posing her. But were she like other woman, and that there were any talking to her, how constant must the pleasure of that man be, who could converse with a creature—but, after all, you may be sure her heart is fixed on some one or other; and yet I have been credibly inform'd; but who can believe half that is said! After she had done speaking to me, she put her hand to her bosom, and adjusted her tucker. Then she cast her eyes a little down, upon my beholding her too earnestly. They say she sings excellently: Her voice in her ordinary speech has something in it inexpressibly sweet. You must know I dined with her at a public table the day after I first saw her, and she helped me to some tansy in the eye of all the gentlemen in the country: She has certainly the finest hand of any woman in the world. I can assure you, Sir, were you to behold her, you would be in the same condition; for as her speech is music, her form is angelic. But I find I grow irregular while I am talking of her: But indeed it would be stupidity to be unconcerned at such perfection. Oh the excellent creature! she is as inimitable to all women, as she is inaccessible to all men.'

I found my friend begin to rave, and insensibly led him towards the house, that we might be joined by some other company; and am convinced that the widow is the secret cause of all that inconsistency which appears in some parts of my friend's discourse; tho' he has so much command of himself as not directly to mention her, yet according to that of *Martial*, which one knows not how to render into *English*, *Dum tacet hanc loquitur.* I shall end this paper with that whole epigram, which represents with much humour my honest friend's condition.

Quicquid agit Rufus nihil est nisi Nævia Rufo
Si gaudet, si flet, si tacet, hanc loquitur:

Cœnat, propinat, poscit, negat, annuit, una est
Nævia; Si non sit Nævia mutus erit.

Scriberet hesterna Patri cum Luce Salutem.
Nævia lux, inquit, Nævia lumen, ave.

Let *Rufus* weep, rejoice, stand, sit, or walk,
Still he can nothing but of *Nævia* talk;
Let him eat, drink, ask questions, or dispute,
Still he must speak of *Nævia*, or be mute.
He writ to his father, ending with this line,
I am, my lovely *Nævia*, ever thine.

XI.

Economy in our affairs has the same effect upon our fortunes which good breeding has upon our conversation. There is a pretending behaviour in both cases, which, instead of making men esteemed, renders them both miserable and contemptible. We had yesterday at Sir ROGER'S a set of country gentlemen who dined with him; and after dinner the glass was taken, by those who pleased, pretty plentifully. Among others I observed a person of a tolerable good aspect, who seemed to be more greedy of liquor than any of the company, and yet, methought, he did not taste it with delight. As he grew warm, he was suspicious of everything that was said; and as he advanced towards being fuddled, his humour grew worse. At the same time his bitterness seem'd to be rather an inward dissatisfaction in his own mind, than any dislike he had taken to the company. Upon hearing his name, I knew him to be a gentleman of a considerable fortune in this country, but greatly in debt. What gives the unhappy man this peevishness of spirit is, that his estate is dipped, and is eating out with usury; and yet he has not the heart to sell any part of it. His proud stomach, at the cost of restless nights, constant inquietudes, danger of affronts, and a thousand nameless inconveniencies, preserves this canker in his fortune, rather than it shall be said he is a man of fewer hundreds a year than he has been commonly reputed. Thus he endures the torment of poverty, to avoid the name of being less rich. If you go to his house you see great plenty; but served in a manner that shews it is all unnatural, and that the master's mind is not at home. There is a certain waste and carelessness in the air of everything, and the whole appears but a covered indigence, a magnificent poverty. That neatness and cheerfulness, which attends the table of him who lives within compass, is wanting, and exchanged for a libertine way of service in all about him.

This gentleman's conduct, tho' a very common way of management, is as ridiculous as that officer's would be, who had but few men under his command, and should take the charge of an extent of country rather than of a small pass. To pay for, personate, and keep in a man's hands, a greater estate than he really has, is of all others the most unpardonable vanity, and must in the end reduce the man who is guilty of it to dishonour. Yet if we look round us in any county of *Great Britain*, we shall see many in this fatal error; if that may be called by so soft a name, which proceeds from a false shame of appearing what they really are, when the contrary behaviour would in a short time advance them to the condition which they pretend to.

Laertes has fifteen hundred pounds a year; which is mortgaged for six thousand pounds; but it is impossible to convince him that if he sold as much as would pay off that debt, he would save four shillings in the pound, which he gives for the vanity of being the reputed master of it. Yet if *Laertes* did this, he would, perhaps, be easier in his own fortune: but then *Irus*, a fellow of yesterday, who has but twelve hundred a year, would be his equal. Rather than this shall be, *Laertes* goes on to bring well-born beggars into the world, and every twelvemonth charges his estate with at least one year's rent more by the birth of a child.

Laertes and *Irus* are neighbours, whose way of living are an abomination to each other. *Irus* is moved by the fear of poverty, and *Laertes* by the shame of it. Though the motive of action is of so near affinity in both, and may be resolved into this, 'That to each of them poverty is the greatest of all evils', yet are their manners very widely different. Shame of poverty makes *Laertes* launch into unnecessary equipage, vain expense, and lavish entertainments; fear of poverty makes *Irus* allow himself only plain necessaries, appear without a servant, sell his own corn, attend his labourers, and be himself a labourer. Shame of poverty makes *Laertes* go every day a step nearer to it; and fear of poverty stirs up *Irus* to make every day some further progress from it.

These different motives produce the excesses which men are guilty of in the negligence of and provision for themselves. Usury, stock-jobbing, extortion and oppression, have their seed in the dread of want; and vanity, riot and prodigality, from the shame of it: But both these excesses are infinitely below the pursuit of a reasonable creature. After we have taken care to command so much as is necessary for maintaining ourselves in the order of men suitable to our character, the care of superfluities is a vice no less extravagant, than the neglect of necessaries would have been before.

Certain it is that they are both out of nature when she is followed with reason and good sense. It is from this reflection that I always read Mr. *Cowley* with the greatest pleasure: His magnanimity is as much above that of other considerable men as his understanding; and it is a true distinguishing spirit in the elegant author who published his works, to dwell so much upon the temper of his mind and the moderation of his desires: By this means he has render'd his friend as amiable as famous. That state of life which bears the face of poverty with Mr. *Cowley's great vulgar*, is admirably described; and it is no small satisfaction to those of the same turn of desire, that he produces the authority of the wisest men of the best age of the world, to strengthen his opinion of the ordinary pursuits of mankind.

It would methinks be no ill maxim of life, if according to that ancestor of Sir ROGER, whom I lately mentioned, every man would point to himself what sum he would resolve not to exceed. He might by this means cheat himself into a tranquillity on this side of that expectation, or convert what he should get above it to nobler uses than his own pleasures or necessaries. This temper of mind would exempt a man from an ignorant envy of restless men above him, and a more inexcusable contempt of happy men below him. This would be sailing by some compass, living with some design; but to be eternally bewildered in prospects of future gain, and putting on unnecessary armour against improbable blows of fortune, is a mechanic being which has not good sense for its direction, but is carried on by a sort of acquired instinct towards things below our consideration and unworthy our esteem. It is possible that the tranquillity I now enjoy at Sir ROGER'S may have created in me this way of thinking, which is so abstracted from the common relish of the world: But as I am now in a pleasing arbour surrounded with a beautiful landskip, I find no inclination so strong as to continue in these mansions, so remote from the ostentatious scenes of life; and am at this present writing philosopher enough to conclude with Mr. *Cowley*;

If e'er ambition did my fancy cheat,
With any wish so mean as to be great;
Continue, heav'n, still from me to remove
The humble blessings of that life I love.

XII.

Bodily labour is of two kinds, either that which a man submits to for his livelihood, or that which he undergoes for his pleasure. The latter of them generally changes the name of labour for that of exercise, but differs only from ordinary labour as it rises from another motive.

A country life abounds in both these kinds of labour, and for that reason gives a man a greater stock of health, and consequently a more perfect enjoyment of himself, than any other way of life. I consider the body as a system of tubes and glands, or to use a more rustic phrase, a bundle of pipes and strainers, fitted to one another after so wonderful a manner as to make a proper engine for the soul to work with. This description does not only comprehend the bowels, bones, tendons, veins, nerves and arteries, but every muscle and every ligature, which is a composition of fibres, that are so many imperceptible tubes or pipes interwoven on all sides with invisible glands or strainers.

This general idea of a human body, without considering it in its niceties of anatomy, lets us see how absolutely necessary labour is for the right preservation of it. There must be frequent motions and agitations, to mix, digest, and separate the juices contained in it, as well as to clear and cleanse that infinitude of pipes and strainers of which it is composed, and to give their solid parts a more firm and lasting tone. Labour or exercise ferments the humours, casts them into their proper channels, throws off redundancies, and helps nature in those secret distributions, without which the body cannot subsist in its vigour, nor the soul act with cheerfulness.

I might here mention the effects which this has upon all the faculties of the mind, by keeping the understanding clear, the imagination untroubled, and refining those spirits that are necessary for the proper exertion of our intellectual faculties, during the present laws of union between soul and body. It is to a neglect in this particular that we must ascribe the spleen, which is so frequent in men of studious and sedentary tempers, as well as the vapours to which those of the other sex are so often subject.

Had not exercise been absolutely necessary for our well-being, nature would not have made the body so proper for it, by giving such an activity to the limbs, and such a pliancy to every part as necessarily produce those compressions, extensions, contortions, dilatations, and all other kinds of motions that are necessary for the preservation of such a system of tubes and glands as has been before mentioned. And that we might not want inducements to engage us in such an exercise of the body as is proper for its welfare, it is so ordered that nothing valuable can be procured without it. Not to mention riches and honour, even food and raiment are not to become at without the toil of the hands and sweat of the brows. Providence furnishes materials, but expects that we should work them up ourselves. The earth must be laboured before it gives its increase, and when it is forced into its several products, how many hands must they pass through before they are fit for use! Manufactures, trade, and agriculture, naturally employ more than nineteen parts of the species in twenty; and as for those who are not obliged to labour, by the condition in which they are born, they are more miserable than the rest of mankind, unless they indulge themselves in that voluntary labour which goes by the name of exercise.

My friend Sir ROGER has been an indefatigable man in business of this kind, and has hung several parts of his house with the trophies of his former labours. The walls of his great hall are covered with the horns of several kinds of deer that he has killed in the chase, which he thinks the most valuable furniture of his house, as they afford him frequent topics of discourse, and shew that he has not been idle. At the lower end of the hall, is a large otter's skin stuffed with hay, which his mother ordered to be hung up in that manner, and the Knight looks upon with great satisfaction, because it seems he was but nine years old when his dog killed him. A little room adjoining to the hall is a kind of arsenal filled with guns of several sizes and inventions, with which the Knight has made great havoc in the woods, and destroyed many thousands of pheasants, partridges and wood-cocks. His stable doors are patched with noses that belonged to foxes of the Knight's own hunting down. Sir ROGER shewed me one of them that for distinction sake has a brass nail struck through it, which cost him about fifteen hours riding, carried him through half a dozen counties, killed him a brace of geldings, and lost above half his dogs. This the Knight looks upon as one of the greatest exploits of his life. The perverse widow, whom I have given some account of, was the death of several foxes; for Sir ROGER has told me that in the course of his amours he patched the western door of his stable. Whenever the widow was cruel, the foxes were sure to pay for it. In proportion as his passion for the widow abated and old age came on, he left off fox-hunting; but a hare is not yet safe that sits within ten miles of his house.

There is no kind of exercise which I would so recommend to my readers of both sexes as this of riding, as there is none which so much conduces to health, and is every way accommodated to the body, according to the ***idea*** which I have given of it. Doctor ***Sydenham*** is very lavish in its praises; and if the ***English*** reader will see the mechanical effects of it describ'd at length, he may find them in a book published not many years since, under the title of ***Medicina Gymnastica.*** For my own part, when I am in town, for want of these opportunities, I exercise myself an hour every morning upon a dumb bell that is placed in a corner of my room, and it pleases me the more because it does everything I require of it in the most profound silence. My landlady and her daughters are so well acquainted with my hours of exercise, that they never come into my room to disturb me whilst I am ringing.

When I was some years younger than I am at present, I used to employ myself in a more laborious diversion, which I learned from a *Latin* treatise of exercises that is written with great erudition: It is there called the Skiomachia or the fighting with a man's own shadow, and consists in the brandishing of two short sticks grasped in each hand, and loaden with plugs of lead at either end. This opens the chest, exercises the limbs, and gives a man all the pleasure of boxing, without the blows. I could wish that several learned men would lay out that time which they employ in controversies and disputes about nothing, in this method of fighting with their own shadows. It might conduce very much to evaporate the spleen, which makes them uneasy to the public as well as to themselves.

To conclude, as I am a compound of soul and body, I consider myself as obliged to a double scheme of duties; and I think I have not fulfilled the business of the day when I do not thus employ the one in labour and exercise, as well as the other in study and contemplation.

XIII.

Those who have searched into human nature observe that nothing so much shews the nobleness of the soul, as that its felicity consists in action. Every man has such an active principle in him, that he will find out something to employ himself upon in whatever place or state of life he is posted. I have heard of a gentleman who was under close confinement in the *Bastile* seven years; during which time he amused himself in scattering a few small pins about his chamber, gathering them up again, and placing them in different figures on the arm of a great chair. He often told his friends afterwards, that unless he had found out this piece of exercise, he verily believed he should have lost his senses.

After what has been said, I need not inform my readers, that Sir ROGER, with whose character I hope they are at present pretty well acquainted, has in his youth gone through the whole course of those rural diversions which the country abounds in; and which seem to be extremely well suited to that laborious industry a man may observe here in a far greater degree than in towns and cities. I have before hinted at some of my friend's exploits: He has in his youthful days taken forty coveys of partridges in a season; and tired many a salmon with a line consisting but of a single hair. The constant thanks and good wishes of the neighbourhood always attended him, on account of his remarkable enmity towards foxes; having destroyed more of those vermin in one year, than it was thought the whole country could have produced. Indeed the Knight does not scruple to own among his most intimate friends that in order to establish his reputation this way, he has secretly sent for great numbers of them out of other counties, which he used to turn loose about the country by night, that he might the better signalise himself in their destruction the next day. His hunting horses were the finest and best managed in all these parts: His tenants are still full of the praises of a grey stone-horse that unhappily staked himself several years since, and was buried with great solemnity in the orchard.

Sir ROGER, being at present too old for fox-hunting, to keep himself in action, has disposed of his beagles and got a pack of ***Stop-Hounds.*** What these want in speed, he endeavours to make amends for by the deepness of their mouths and the variety of their notes, which are suited in such manner to each other, that the whole cry makes up a complete concert. He is so nice in this particular that a gentleman having made him a present of a very fine hound the other day, the Knight returned it by the servant with a great many expressions of civility; but desired him to tell his master, that the dog he had sent was indeed a most excellent *Bass*, but that at present he only wanted a *Counter-tenor.* Could I believe my friend had ever read *Shakespeare*, I should certainly conclude he had taken the hint from *Theseus* in *the Midsummer Night's Dream.*

> *My hounds are bred out of the* Spartan *kind,*
> *So flu'd, so sanded; and their heads are hung*
> *With ears that sweep away the morning dew.*
> *Crook-knee'd and dew-lap'd like* Thessalian *bulls;*
> *Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouths like bells,*
> *Each under each: A cry more tuneable*
> *Was never hallow'd to, nor cheer'd with horn.*

Sir ROGER is so keen at this sport, that he has been out almost every day since I came down; and upon the chaplain's offering to lend me his easy pad, I was prevailed on yesterday morning to make one of the company. I was extremely pleased, as we rid along, to observe the general benevolence of all the neighbourhood towards my friend. The farmers' sons thought themselves happy if they could open a gate for the good old Knight as he passed by; which he generally requited with a nod or a smile, and a kind enquiry after their fathers or uncles.

After we had rid about a mile from home, we came upon a large heath, and the sportsmen began to beat. They had done so for sometime, when, as I was at a little distance from the rest of the company, I saw a hare pop out from a small furze-brake almost under my horse's feet. I marked the way she took, which I endeavoured to make the company sensible of by extending my arm; but to no purpose, 'till Sir ROGER, who knows that none of my extraordinary motions are insignificant, rode up to me, and asked me *if puss was gone that way?* Upon my answering *Yes,* he immediately called in the dogs, and put them upon the scent. As they were going off, I heard one of the country-fellows muttering to his companion, *that 'twas a wonder they had not lost all their sport, for want of the silent gentleman's crying STOLE AWAY.*

This, with my aversion to leaping hedges, made me withdraw to a rising ground, from whence I could have the picture of the whole chace, without the fatigue of keeping in with the hounds. The hare immediately threw them above a mile behind her; but I was pleased to find, that instead of running straightforwards, or in hunter's language, *flying the country,* as I was afraid she might have done, she wheel'd about, and described a sort of a circle round the hill where I had taken my station, in such a manner as gave me a very distinct view of the sport. I could see her first pass by, and the dogs sometime afterwards unravelling the whole track she had made, and following her thro' all her doubles. I was at the same time delighted in observing that deference with the rest of the pack paid to each particular hound, according to the character he had acquired amongst them: If they were at fault, and an old hound of reputation opened but once, he was immediately followed by the whole cry; while a raw dog or one who was a noted *liar,* might have helped his heart out, without being taken notice of.

The hare now, after having squatted two or three times, and been put up again as often, came still nearer to the place where she was at first started. The dogs pursued her, and these were followed by the jolly Knight, who rode upon a white gelding, encompassed by his tenants and servants, and cheering his hounds with all the gaiety of five and twenty. One of the sportsmen rode up to me, and told me, that he was sure the chace was almost at an end, because the old dogs, which had hitherto lain behind, now headed the pack. The fellow was in the right. Our hare took a large field just under us, followed by the full cry *in view*. I must confess the brightness of the weather, the cheerfulness of everything around me, the *chiding* of the hounds, which was returned upon us in a double echo, from two neighbouring hills, with the hallowing of the sportsmen, and the sounding of the horn, lifted my spirits into a most lively pleasure, which I freely indulged because I was sure it was *innocent*. If I was under any concern, it was on the account of the poor hare, that was now quite spent, and almost within the reach of her enemies; when the huntsman getting forward threw down his pole before the dogs. They were now within eight yards of that game which they had been pursuing for almost as many hours; yet on the signal beforementioned they all made a sudden stand, and tho' they continued opening as much as before, durst not once attempt to pass beyond the pole. At the same time Sir ROGER rode forward, and alighting, took up the hare in his arms; which he soon delivered up to one of his servants with an order, if she could be kept alive, to let her go in his great orchard; where it seems he has several of these prisoners of war, who live together in a very comfortable captivity. I was highly pleased to see the discipline of the pack, and the good-nature of the Knight, who could not find in his heart to murder a creature that had given him so much diversion.

As we were returning home, I remembered that monsieur *Paschal* in his most excellent discourse on *the misery of man*, tells us, that *all our endeavours after greatness proceed from* *nothing but a desire of being surrounded by a multitude of persons and affairs that may hinder us from looking into ourselves, which is a view we cannot bear.* He afterwards goes on to shew that our love of sports comes from the same reason, and is particularly severe upon HUNTING. *What,* says he, *unless it be to drown thought, can make men throw away so much time and pains upon a silly animal, which they might buy cheaper in the market?* The foregoing reflection is certainly just, when a man suffers his whole mind to be drawn into his sports, and altogether loses himself in the woods; but does not affect those who propose a far more laudable end from this exercise, I mean, *the preservation of health, and keeping all the organs of the soul in a condition to execute her orders.* Had that incomparable person, whom I last quoted, been a little more indulgent to himself in this point, the world might probably have enjoyed him much longer; whereas thro' too great an application to his studies in his youth, he contracted that ill-habit of body, which, after a tedious sickness, carried him off in the fortieth year of his age; and the whole history we have of his life till that time, is but one continued account of the behaviour of a noble soul struggling under innumerable pains and distempers.

For my own part I intend to hunt twice a week during my stay with Sir ROGER; and shall prescribe the moderate use of this exercise to all my country friends, as the best kind of physic for mending a bad constitution, and preserving a good one.

I cannot do this better, than in the following lines out of Mr. *Dryden.*

The first physicians by debauch were made;
Excess began, and sloth sustains the trade.

By chace our long-liv'd fathers earn'd their food;
Toil strung the nerves, and purify'd the blood;
But we their sons, a pamper'd race of men,
Are dwindled down to threescore years and ten.
Better to hunt in fields for health unbought,
Than fee the Doctor for a nauseous draught.
The wise for cure on exercise depend:
God never made his work for man to mend.

XIV.

There are some opinions in which a man should stand neuter, without engaging his assent to one side or the other. Such a hovering faith as this, which refuses to settle upon any determination, is absolutely necessary to a mind that is careful to avoid errors and prepossessions. When the arguments press equally on both sides in matters that are indifferent to us, the safest method is to give up ourselves to neither.

It is with this temper of mind that I consider the subject of witch-craft. When I hear the relations that are made from all parts of the world, not only from *Norway* and ***Lapland***, from the *East* and ***West Indies***, but from every particular nation in *Europe*, I cannot forbear thinking that there is such an intercourse and commerce with evil spirits, as that which we express by the name of witch-craft. But when I consider that the ignorant and credulous parts of the world abound most in these relations, and that the persons among us, who are supposed to engage in such an infernal commerce, are people of a weak understanding and a crazed imagination, and at the same time reflect upon the many impostures and delusions of this nature that have been detected in all ages, I endeavour to suspend my belief till I hear more certain accounts than any which have yet come to my knowledge. In short, when I consider the question, whether there are such persons in the world as those we call witches, my mind is divided between the two opposite opinions; or rather (to speak my thoughts freely) I believe in general that there is, and has been such a thing as witchcraft; but at the same time can give no credit to any particular instance of it.

I am engaged in this speculation, by some occurrences that I met with yesterday, which I shall give my reader an account of at large. As I was walking with my friend Sir ROGER by the side of one of his woods, an old woman applied herself to me for my charity. Her dress and figure put me in mind of the following description in *Otway.*

In a close lane as I pursu'd my iourney,
I spy'd a wrinkled hag, *with age grown double,*
Picking dry sticks, and mumbling to herself.
Her eyes with scalding rheum were gall'd and red,
Cold palsy shook her head; her hands seem'd wither'd;
And on her crooked shoulders had she wrap'd
The tatter'd remnant of an old striped hanging,
Which served to keep her carcase from the cold:
So there was nothing of a piece about her.
Her lower weeds were all o'vr coarsely patch'd
With diff'rent-colour'd rags, black, red, white, yellow,
And seem'd to speak variety of wretchedness.

As I was musing on this description, and comparing it with the object before me, the Knight told me, that this very old woman had the reputation of a witch all over the country, that her lips were observed to be always in motion, and that there was not a switch about her house which her neighbours did not believe had carried her several hundreds of miles. If she chanced to stumble, they always found sticks or straws that lay in the figure of a cross before her. If she made any mistake at church, and cried *Amen* in a wrong place, they never failed to conclude that she was saying her prayers backwards. There was not a maid in the parish that would take a pin of her, though she would offer a bag of money with it. She goes by the name of *Moll White* and has made the country ring with several imaginary exploits which are palmed upon her. If the dairy maid does not make her butter come so soon as she should have it, *Moll White* is at the bottom of the churn. If a horse sweats in the stable, *Moll White* has been upon his back. If a hare makes an unexpected escape from the hounds, the huntsman curses *Moll White*. Nay, (says Sir ROGER) I have known the master of the pack, upon such an occasion, send one of his servants to see if *Moll White* had been out that morning.

This account raised my curiosity so far, that I begged my friend Sir ROGER to go with me into her hovel, which stood in a solitary corner under the side of the wood. Upon our first entering Sir ROGER winked to me, and pointed at something that stood behind the door, which, upon looking that way, I found to be an old broom-staff. At the same time he whispered me in the ear to take notice of a tabby cat that sat in the chimney-corner, which, as the old Knight told me, lay under as bad a report as *Moll White* herself; for besides that *Moll* is said often to accompany her in the same shape, the cat is reported to have spoken twice or thrice in her life, and to have played several pranks above the capacity of an ordinary cat.

I was secretly concerned to see human nature in so much wretchedness and disgrace, but at the same time could not forbear smiling to hear Sir ROGER, who is a little puzzled about the old woman, advising her as a justice of peace to avoid all communication with the devil, and never to hurt any of her neighbours' cattle. We concluded our visit with a bounty, which was very acceptable.

In our return home, Sir ROGER told me, that old *Moll* had been often brought before him for making children spit pins, and giving maids the nightmare ; and that the country people would be tossing her into a pond and trying experiments with her every day, if it was not for him and his chaplain.

I have since found upon enquiry, that Sir ROGER was several times staggered with the reports that had been brought him concerning this old woman, and would frequently have bound her over to the county sessions, had not his chaplain with much ado persuaded him to the contrary.

I have been the more particular in this account, because I hear there is scarce a village in *England* that has not a *Moll White* in it. When an old woman begins to doat, and grow chargeable to a parish, she is generally turned into a witch, and fills the whole country with extravagant fancies, imaginary distempers and terrifying dreams. In the meantime, the poor wretch that is the innocent occasion of so many evils begins to be frighted at herself, and sometimes confesses secret commerces and familiarities that her imagination forms in a delirious old age. This frequently cuts off charity from the greatest objects of compassion, and inspires people with a malevolence towards those poor decrepit parts of our species, in whom human nature is defaced by infirmity and dotage.

XV.

This agreeable seat is surrounded with so many pleasing walks, which are struck out of a wood, in the midst of which the house stands, that one can hardly ever be weary of rambling from one labyrinth of delight to another. To one used to live in a city the charms of the country are so exquisite, that the mind is lost in a certain transport which raises us above ordinary life, and is yet not strong enough to be inconsistent with tranquillity. This state of mind was I in, ravished with the murmur of waters, the whisper of breezes, the singing of birds; and whether I looked up to the heavens, down on the earth, or turned to the prospects around me, still struck with new sense of pleasure; when I found by the voice of my friend, who walked by me, that we had insensibly strolled into the grove sacred to the widow. This woman, says he, is of all others the most unintelligible: She either designs to marry, or she does not. What is the most perplexing of all is, that she does not either say to her lovers she has any resolution against that condition of life in general, or that she banishes them; but conscious of her own merit, she permits their addresses, without fear of any ill consequence, or want of respect, from their rage or despair. She has that in her aspect, against which it is impossible to offend. A man whose thoughts are constantly bent upon so agreeable an object, must be excused if the ordinary occurrences in conversation are below his attention. I call her indeed perverse, but, alas! Why do I call her so? Because her superior merit is such, that I cannot approach her without awe, that my heart is checked by too much esteem: I am angry that her charms are not more accessible, that I am more inclined to worship than salute her. How often have I wished her unhappy that I might have an opportunity of serving her? And how often troubled in that very imagination, at giving her the pain of being obliged? Well, I have led a miserable life in secret upon her account; but fancy she would have condescended to have some regard for me, if it had not been for that watchful animal her confidant.

Of all persons under the sun (continued he, calling me by my name) be sure to set a mark upon confidant: They are of all people the most impertinent. What is most pleasant to observe in them, is, that they assume to themselves the merit of the persons whom they have in their custody. *Orestilla* is a great fortune, and in wonderful danger of surprises, therefore full of suspicions of the least indifferent thing, particularly careful of new acquaintance, and of growing too familiar with the old. *Themista*, her favourite woman, is every whit as careful of whom she speaks to, and what she says. Let the ward be a beauty, her confidant shall treat you with an air of distance; let her be a fortune, and she assumes the suspicious behaviour of her friend and patroness. Thus it is that very many of our unmarried women of distinction, are to all intents and purposes married, except the consideration of different sexes. They are directly under the conduct of their whisperer; and think they are in a state of freedom, while they can prate with one of these attendants of all men in general, and still avoid the man they most like. You do not see one heiress in a hundred whose fate does not turn upon this circumstance of choosing a confidant. Thus it is that the lady is addressed to, presented and flattered, only by proxy, in her woman. In my case, how is it possible that—Sir ROGER was proceeding in his harangue, when we heard the voice of one speaking very importunately, and repeating these words, 'What, not one smile'? We followed the sound till we came to a close thicket, on the other side of which we saw a young woman sitting as it were in a personated sullenness just over a transparent fountain. Opposite to her stood Mr. *William*, Sir ROGER'S master of the game. The Knight whispered me, 'Hist, these are lovers'. The huntsman looking earnestly at the shadow of the young maiden in the stream, 'Oh thou dear picture, if thou couldst remain there in the absence of that fair creature whom you represent in the water, how willingly could I stand here satisfied for ever, without troubling my dear *Betty* herself with any mention of her unfortunate *William*, whom she is angry with: But alas! When she pleases to be gone, thou wilt also vanish......Yet let me talk to thee while thou dost stay. Tell my dearest *Betty* thou dost not more depend upon her, than does her *William*? Her absence will make away with me as well as thee. If she offers to remove thee, I'll jump into these waves to lay hold on thee; herself, her own dear person, I must never embrace again.........still do you hear me without one smile......it is too much to bear.......' He had no sooner spoke these words, but he made an offer of throwing himself into the water: At which his mistress started up, and at the next instant he jumped across the fountain and met her in an embrace. She half recovering from her fright, said in the most charming voice imaginable, and with a tone of complaint, 'I thought how well you would drown yourself. No, no, you won't drown yourself till you have taken your leave of *Susan Holiday*'. The huntsman, with a tenderness that spoke the most passionate love, and with his cheek close to hers, whispered the softest vows of fidelity in her ear, and cried, 'Don't, my dear, believe a word *Kate Willow* says; she is spiteful and makes stories, because she loves to hear me talk to herself for your sake'. Look you there, quoth Sir ROGER, do you see there, all mischief comes from confidants! But let us not interrupt them; the maid is honest, and the man dare not be otherwise, for he knows I loved her father: I will interpose in this matter, and hasten the wedding. ***Kate Willow*** is a witty mischievous wench in the neighbourhood, who was a beauty; and makes me hope I shall see the perverse widow in her condition. She was so flippant with her answers to all the honest fellows that came near her, and so very vain of her beauty, that she has valued herself upon her charms till they are ceased. She therefore now makes it her business to prevent other young women from being more discreet than she was herself: However, the saucy thing said the other day well enough, 'Sir ROGER and I must make a match, for we are both despised by those we loved'. The hussy has a great deal of power wherever she comes, and has her share of cunning.

However, when I reflect upon this woman, I do not know whether in the main I am the worse for having loved her: Whenever she is recalled to my imagination my youth returns, and I feel a forgotten warmth in my veins. This affliction in my life has streaked all my conduct with a softness, of which I should otherwise have been incapable. It is, perhaps, to this dear image in my heart owing, that I am apt to relent, that I easily forgive, and that many desirable things are grown into my temper, which I should not have arrived at by better motives than the thought of being one day hers. I am pretty well satisfied such a passion as I have had is never well cured; and between you and me, I am often apt to imagine it has had some whimsical effect upon my brain: For I frequently find, that in my most serious discourse I let fall some comical familiarity of speech or odd phrase that makes the company laugh; however, I cannot but allow she is a most excellent woman. When she is in the country I warrant she does not run into dairies, but reads upon the nature of plants; but has a glass hive, and comes into the garden out of books to see them work, and observe the policies of their commonwealth. She understands everything. I'd give ten pounds to hear her argue with my friend Sir ANDREW FREEPORT about trade. No, no, for all she looks so innocent as it were, take my word for it she is no fool."

XVI.

The first and most obvious reflections which arise in a man who changes the city for the country, are upon the different manners of the people whom he meets within those two different scenes of life. By manners I do not mean morals, but behaviour and good breeding, as they shew themselves in the town and in the country.

And here, in the first place, I must observe a very great revolution that has happen'd in this article of good breeding. Several obliging deferences, condescensions and submissions, with many outward forms and ceremonies that accompany them, were first of all brought up among the politer part of mankind, who lived in courts and cities, and distinguished themselves from the rustic part of the species (who on all occasions acted bluntly and naturally) by such a mutual complaisance and intercourse of civilities. These forms of conversation by degrees multiplied and grew troublesome; the modish world found too great a constraint in them, and have therefore thrown most of them aside. Conversation, like the *Romish* religion, was so encumbered with show and ceremony, that it stood in need of a reformation to retrench its superfluities, and restore it to its natural good sense and beauty. At present therefore an unconstrained carriage, and a certain openness of behaviour, are the height of good breeding. The fashionable world is grown free and easy; our manners sit more loose upon us: Nothing is so modish as an agreeable negligence. In a word, good breeding shews itself most, where to an ordinary eye it appears the least.

If after this we look on the people of mode in the country, we find in them the manners of the last age. They have no sooner fetched themselves up to the fashion of the polite world, but the town has dropped them, and are nearer to the first state of nature than to those refinements which formerly reign'd in the court, and still prevail in the country. One may now know a man that never conversed in the world by his excess of good breeding. A polite country 'Squire shall make you as many bows in half an hour, as would serve a courtier for a week. There is infinitely more to do about place and precedency in a meeting of justices wives, than in an assembly of duchesses.

This rural politeness is very troublesome to a man of my temper, who generally takes the chair that is next me, and walk first or last, in the front or in the rear, as chance directs. I have known my friend Sir ROGER'S dinner almost cold before the company could adjust the ceremonial, and be prevailed upon to sit down; and have heartily pitied my old friend, when I have seen him forced to pick and cull his guests, as they sat at the several parts of his table, that he might drink their healths according to their respective ranks and qualities. Honest *Will Wimble*, who I should have thought had been altogether uninfected with ceremony, gives me abundance of trouble in this particular. Though he has been fishing all the morning, he will not help himself at dinner 'till I am served. When we are going out of the hall, he runs behind me; and last night, as we were walking in the fields, stopped short at a stile till I came up to it, and upon my making signs to him to get over, told me, with a serious smile, that sure I believed they had no manners in the country.

There has happened another revolution in the point of good breeding, which relates to the conversation among men of mode, and which I cannot but look upon as very extraordinary. It was certainly one of the first distinctions of a wellbred man, to express everything that had the most remote appearance of being obscene, in modest terms and distant phrases; whilst the clown, who had no such delicacy of conception and expression, clothed his *ideas* in those plain homely terms that are the most obvious and natural. This kind of good manners was perhaps carried to an excess, so as to make conversation too stiff, formal and precise: For which reason (as hypocrisy in one age is generally succeeded by atheism in another) conversation is in a great measure relapsed into the first extreme; so that at present several of our men of the town, and particularly those who have been polished in *France*, make use of the most coarse uncivilized words in our language, and ütter themselves often in such a manner as a clown would blush to hear.

This infamous piece of good breeding, which reigns among the coxcombs of the town, has not yet made its way into the country; and as it is impossible for such an irrational way of conversation to last long among a people that make any profession of religion, or show of modesty, if the country gentlemen get into it they will certainly be left in the lurch. Their good breeding will come too late to them, and they will be thought a parcel of lewd clowns, while they fancy themselves talking together like men of wit and pleasure.

As the two points of good breeding, which I have hitherto insisted upon, regard behaviour and conversation, there is a third which turns upon dress. In this too the country are very much behind hand. The rural beaus are not yet got out of the fashion that took place at the time of the Revolution, but ride about the country in red coats and laced hats, while the women in many parts are still trying to outvie one another in the height of their head dresses.

But a friend of mine, who is now upon the western circuit, having promised to give me an account of the several modes and fashions that prevail in the different parts of the nation through which he passes, I shall defer the enlarging upon this last topic till I have received a letter from him, which I expect every post.

XVII.

My friend Sir ROGER is very often merry with me upon my passing so much of my time among his poultry: He has caught me twice or thrice looking after a bird's nest, and several times sitting an hour or two together near an hen and chickens. He tells me he believes I am personally acquainted with every fowl about his house; calls such a particular cock my favourite, and frequently complains that his ducks and geese have more of my company than himself.

I must confess I am infinitely delighted with those speculations of nature which are to be made in a country life; and as my reading has very much lain among books of natural history, I cannot forbear recollecting upon this occasion the several remarks which I have met within authors, and comparing them with what falls under my own observation: The arguments for Providence drawn from the natural history of animals being in my opinion demonstrative.

The make of every kind of animal is different from that of every other kind: and yet there is not the least turn in the muscles or twist in the fibres of anyone, which does not render them more proper for that particular animal's way of life than any other cast or texture of them would have been.

The most violent appetites in all creatures are *Lust* and *Hunger*: The first is a perpetual call upon them to propagate their kind; the latter to preserve themselves.

It is astonishing to consider the different degrees of care that descend from the parent to the young, so far as is absolutely necessary for the leaving a posterity. Some creatures cast their eggs as chance directs them, and think of them no farther, as insects and several kinds of fish: Others, of a nicer frame, find out proper beds to deposit them in, and there leave them; as the serpent, the crocodile, and ostrich: Others hatch their eggs and tend the birth, 'till it is able to shift for itself.

What can we call the principle which directs every different kind of bird to observe a particular plan in the structure of its nest, and directs all of the same species to work after the same model? It cannot be *imitation* for though you hatch a crow under a hen, and never let it see any of the works of its own kind, the nest it makes shall be the same, to the laying of a stick, with all the other nests of the same species. It cannot be *reason*; for were animals endued with it to as great a degree as man, their buildings would be as different as ours, according to the different conveniencies that they would propose to themselves.

Is it not remarkable, that the same temper of weather, which raises this genial warmth in animals, should cover the trees with leaves and the fields with grass for their security and concealment, and produce such infinite swarms of insects for the support and sustenance of their respective broods ?

Is it not wonderful, that the love of the parent should be so violent while it lasts ; and that it should last no longer than is necessary for the preservation of the young ?

The violence of this natural love is exemplify'd by a very barbarous experiment ; which I shall quote at length, as I find it in an excellent author, and hope my readers will pardon the mentioning such an instance of cruelty, because there is nothing can so effectually shew the strength of that principle in animals of which I am here speaking. 'A person who was well skilled in dissection opened a bitch, and as she lay in the most exquisite torture, offered her one of her young puppies, which she immediately fell a licking ; and for the time seemed insensible of her own pain : On the removal, she kept her eye fixt on it, and began a wailing sort of cry, which seemed rather to proceed from the loss of her young one, than the sense of her own torments'.

But not withstanding this natural love in brutes is much more violent and intense than in rational creatures, Providence has taken care that it should be no longer troublesome to the parent than it is useful to the young : For so soon as the wants of the latter cease, the mother withdraws her fondness, and leaves them to provide for themselves ; and what is a very remarkable circumstance in this part of instinct, we find that the love of the parent may be lengthened out beyond its usual time, if the preservation of the species requires it ; as we may see in birds that drive away their young as soon as they are able to get their livelihood, but continue to feed them if they are tied to the nest, or confined within a cage, or by any other means appear to be out of a condition of supplying their own necessities.

This natural love is not observed in animals to ascend from the young to the parent, which is not at all necessary for the continuance of the species: Nor indeed in reasonable creatures does it rise in any proportion, as it spreads itself downwards ; for in all family affection, we find protection granted and favours bestowed, are greater motives to love and tenderness, than safety, benefits, or life received.

One would wonder to hear sceptical men disputing for the reason of animals, and telling us it is only our pride and prejudices that will not allow them the use of that faculty.

Reason shews itself in all occurrences of life ; whereas the brute makes no discovery of such a talent, but in what immediately regards his own preservation, or the continuance of his species. Animals in their generation are wiser than the sons of men ; but their wisdom is confined to a few particulars, and lies in a very narrow compass. Take a brute out of his instinct, and you find him wholly deprived of understanding. To use an instance that comes often under observation.

With what caution does the hen provide herself a nest in places unfrequented, and free from noise and disturbance! When she has laid her eggs in such a manner that she can cover them, what care does she take in turning them frequently, that all parts may partake of the vital warmth? When she leaves them, to provide for her necessary sustenance, how punctually does she return before they have time to cool, and become incapable of producing an animal? In the summer you see her giving herself greater freedoms, and quitting her care for above two hours together; but in winter, when the rigour of the season would chill the principles of life, and destroy the young one, she grows more assiduous in her attendance, and stays away but half the time. When the birth approaches, with how much nicety and attention does she help the chick to break its prison? Not to take notice of her covering it from the injuries of the weather, providing it proper nourishment, and teaching it to help itself; nor to mention her forsaking the nest, if after the usual time of reckoning the young one does not make its appearance. A chymical operation could not be followed with greater art or diligence, than is seen in the hatching of a chick; tho' there are many other birds that shew an infinitely greater sagacity in all the forementioned particulars.

But at the same time the hen, that has all this seeming ingenuity, (which is indeed absolutely necessary for the propagation of the species) considered in other respects, is without the least glimmerings of thought or common sense. She mistakes a piece of chalk for an egg, and sits upon it in the same manner: She is insensible of any increase or diminution in the number of those she lays: She does not distinguish between her own and those of another species; and when the birth appears of never so different a bird, will cherish it for her own. In all these circumstances which do not carry an immediate regard to the subsistance of herself or her species, she is a very idiot.

There is not, in my opinion, anything more mysterious in nature than this instinct in animals, which thus rises above reason, and falls infinitely short of it. It cannot be accounted for by any properties in matter, and at the same time works after so odd a manner, that one cannot think it the faculty of an intellectual being. For my own part, I look upon it as upon the principle of gravitation in bodies, which is not to be explained by any known qualities inherent in the bodies themselves, nor from any laws of mechanism, but, according to the best notions of the greatest philosophers, is an immediate impression from the first mover, and the divine energy acting in the creatures.

XVIII.

As I was walking this morning in the great yard that belongs to my friend's country house, I was wonderfully pleased to see the different workings of instinct in a hen followed by a brood of ducks. The young, upon the sight of a pond, immediately ran into it ; while the stepmother, with all imaginable anxiety, hovered about the borders of it, to call them out of an element that appeared to her so dangerous and destructive. As the different principle which acted in these different animals cannot be termed reason, so when we call it *instinct*, we mean something we have no knowledge of. To me, as I hinted in my last paper, it seems the immediate direction of Providence, and such an operation of the supreme Being, as that which determines all the portions of matter to their proper centres. A modern philosopher, quoted by monsieur *Bayle* in his learned dissertation on the souls of brutes, delivers the same opinion, tho' in a bolder form of words, where he says, *Deus est Anima Brutorum*, God himself is the soul of brutes. Who can tell what to call that seeming sagacity in animals, which directs them to such food as is proper for them, and makes them naturally avoid whatever is noxious or unwholesome? *Tully* has observed that a lamb no sooner falls from its mother, but immediately and of his own accord applies itself to the teat. *Dampier*, in his travels, tells us, that when seamen are thrown upon any of the unknown coasts of *America*, they never venture upon the fruit of any tree, how tempting soever it may appear, unless they observe that it is marked with the pecking of birds; but fall on without any fear or apprehension where the birds have been before them.

But notwithstanding animals have nothing like the use of reason, we find in them all the lower parts of our nature, the passions and senses in their greatest strength and perfection. And here it is worth our observation, that all beasts and birds of prey are wonderfully subject to anger, malice, revenge, and all the other violent passions that may animate them in search of their proper food; as those that are incapable of defending themselves, or annoying others, or whose safety lies chiefly in their flight, are suspicious, fearful and apprehensive of everything they see or hear; whilst others that are of assistance and use to man, have their natures softened with something mild and tractable, and by that means are qualified for a domestic life. In this case the passions generally correspond with the make of the body. We do not find the fury of a lion in so weak and defenceless an animal as a lamb, nor the meekness of a lamb in a creature so armed for battle and assault as the lion. In the same manner, we find that particular animals have a more or less exquisite sharpness and sagacity in those particular senses which most turn to their advantage, and in which their safety and welfare is the most concerned.

Nor must we here omit that great variety of arms with which nature has differently fortified the bodies of several kind of animals, such as claws, hoofs, and horns, teeth, and tusks, a tail, a sting, a trunk, or a *Proboscis.* It is likewise observed by naturalists, that it must be some hidden principle distinct from what we call reason, which instructs animals in the use of these their arms, and teaches them to manage them to the best advantage; because they naturally defend themselves with that part in which their strength lies, before the weapon be formed in it; as is remarkable in lambs, which tho' they are bred within doors, and never saw the actions of their own species, push at those who approach them with their foreheads, before the first budding of a horn appears.

I shall add to these general observations, an instance which Mr. *Lock* has given us of Providence even in the imperfections of a creature which seems the meanest and most despicable in the whole animal world. '*We may*', says he, " from the make of an Oyster, or Cockle, conclude, that it has not so many nor so quick senses as a man, or several other animals: Nor if it had, would it, in that state and incapacity of transferring itself from one place to another, be bettered by them. What good would sight and hearing do to a creature, that cannot move itself to, or from the object, wherein at a distance it perceives good or evil? And would not quickness of sensation be an inconvenience to an animal, that must be still where chance has once placed it; and there receive the afflux of colder or warmer, clean or foul water, as it happens to come to it."

I shall add to this instance out of Mr. *Lock* another out of the learned Dr. *More*, who cites it from *Cardan*, in relation to another animal which Providence has left defective, but at the same time has shewn its wisdom in the formation of that organ in which it seems chiefly to have failed. "What is more obvious and ordinary than a mole? And yet what more palpable argument of Providence than she? The members of her body are so exactly fitted to her nature and manner of life: For her dwelling being under-ground where nothing is to be seen, nature has so obscurely fitted her with eyes, that naturalists can hardly agree whether she have any sight at all or no. But for amends, what she is capable of for her defence and warning of danger, she has very eminently conferred upon her; for she is exceeding quick hearing. And then her short tail and short legs, but broad forefeet armed with sharp claws, we see by the event to what purpose they are, she so swiftly working herself underground, and making her way so fast in the earth as they that behold it cannot but admire it. Her legs therefore are short, that she need dig no more than will serve the mere thickness of her body; and her forefeet are broad that she may scoop away much earth at a time; and little or no tail she has, because she courses it not on the ground, like the rat or mouse, of whose kindred she is, but lives under the earth, and is fain to dig herself a dwelling there. And she making her way through so thick an element, which will not yield easily, as the air or the water, it had been dangerous to have drawn so long a train behind her; for her enemy might fall upon her rear, and fetch her out, before she had completed or got full possession of her works."

I cannot forbear mentioning Mr. *Boyle's* remark upon this last creature, who I remember somewhere in his works observes, that though the mole be not totally blind (as it is commonly thought) she has not sight enough to distinguish particular objects. Her eye is said to have but one humour in it, which is supposed to give her the idea of light, but of nothing else, and is so formed that this idea is probably painful to the animal. Whenever she comes up into broad day she might be in danger of being taken, unless she were thus affected by a light striking upon her eye, and immediately warning her to bury herself in her proper element. More sight would be useless to her, as none at all might be fatal.

I have only instanced such animals as seem the most imperfect works of nature; and if Providence shews itself even in the blemishes of these creatures, how much more does it discover itself in the several endowments which it has variously bestowed upon such creatures as are more or less finished and completed in their several faculties, according to the condition of life in which they are posted.

I could wish our Royal Society would compile a body of natural history, the best that could be gathe'd together from books and observations. If the several writers among them took each his particular species, and gave us a distinct account of its original, birth and education; its policies, hostilities and alliances, with the frame and texture of its inward and outward parts, and particularly those that distinguish it from all other animals, with their peculiar aptitudes for the state of being in which Providence has placed them, it would be one of the best services their studies could do mankind, and not a little redound to the glory of the all wise Contriver.

It is true, such a natural history, after all the disquisitions of the learned, would be infinitely short and defective. Seas and deserts hide millions of animals from our observation. Innumerable artifices and stratagems are acted in the *Howling Wilderness* and in the *Great Deep*, that can never come to our knowledge. Besides that there are infinitely more species of creatures which are not to be seen without, nor indeed with the help of the finest glasses, than of such as are bulky enough for the naked eye to take hold of. However from the consideration of such animals as lie within the compass of our knowledge, we might easily form a conclusion of the rest, that the same variety of wisdom and goodness runs through the whole creation, and puts every creature in a condition to provide for its safety and subsistence in its proper station.

Tully has given us an admirable sketch of natural history, in his second book concerning the nature of the gods; and that in a style so raised by metaphors and descriptions, that it lifts the subject above raillery and ridicule, which frequently fall on such nice observations when they pass through the hands of an ordinary writer.

XIX.

A man's first care should be to avoid the reproaches of his own heart; his next, to escape the censures of the world: If the last interferes with the former, it ought to be entirely neglected; but otherwise, there cannot be a greater satisfaction to an honest mind, than to see those approbations which it gives itself seconded by the applauses of the public: A man is more sure of his conduct, when the verdict which he passes upon his own behaviour is thus warranted and confirmed by the opinion of all that know him.

My worthy friend Sir ROGER is one of those who is not only at peace within himself, but beloved and esteemed by all about him. He receives a suitable tribute for his universal benevolence to mankind, in the returns of affection and good-will, which are paid him by every one that lives within his neighbourhood. I lately met with two or three odd instances of that general respect which is shown to the good old Knight. He would needs carry *Will Wimble* and myself with him to the country assizes: As we were upon the road *Will. Wimble* joined a couple of plain men who rid before us, and conversed with them for sometime; during which my friend Sir ROGER acquainted me with their characters.

The first of them, says he, that has a spaniel by his side, is a human of about an hundred pounds a year, an honest man: He is just within the game-act, and qualified to kill an hare or a pheasant: He knocks down a dinner with his gun twice or thrice a week; and by that means lives much cheaper than those who have not so good an estate as himself. He would be a good neighbour if he did not destroy so many partridges: In short, he is a very sensible man; shoots flying; and has been several times foreman of the petty jury.

The other that rides along with him is *Tom Touchy*, a fellow famous for *taking the law* of every body. There is not one in the town where he lives that he has not sued at a quarter sessions. The rogue had once the inpudence to go to law with the *widow*. His head is full of costs, damages, and ejectments: He plagued a couple of honest gentlemen so long for a trespass in breaking one of his hedges, till he was forced to sell the ground it enclosed to defray the charges of the prosecution: His father left him fourscore pounds a year; but he has *cast* and been cast so often, that he is not now worth thirty. I suppose he is going upon the old business of the Willow-tree.

As Sir ROGER was giving me this account of *Tom Touchy*, *Will. Wimble* and his two companions stopped short till we came up to them. After having paid their respects to Sir ROGER, *Will.* told him that Mr. *Touchy* and he must appeal to him upon a dispute that arose between them. *Will*, it seems had been giving his fellow-traveller an account of his angling one day in such a hole; when *Tom Touchy*, instead of hearing out his story, told him that Mr. ......such an one, if he pleased, might *take the law of him* for fishing in that part of the river. My friend Sir ROGER heard them both, upon a round trot; and after having paused sometime told them, with the air of a man who would not give his judgment rashly, that *much might be said on both sides.* They were neither of them dissatisfied with the Knight's determination, because neither of them found himself in the wrong by it: Upon which we made the best of our way to the assizes.

The court was sat before Sir ROGER came; but notwithstanding all the justices had taken their places upon the bench, they made room for the old Knight at the head of them; who for his reputation in the country took occasion to whisper in the judge'r ear, *that he was glad his lordship had met with so much good weather in his circuit.* I was listening to the proceedings of the court with much attention, and infinitely pleased with that great appearance and solemnity which so properly accompanies such a public administration of our law; when, after about an hour's sitting, I observed to my great surprise, in the midst of a trial, that my friend Sir ROGER was getting up to speak. I was in some pain for him, till I found he had acquitted himself of two or three sentences, with a look of much business and great intrepidity.

Upon his first rising the court was hushed, and a general whisper ran among the country people that Sir ROGER *was up.*

The speech he made was so little to the purpose, that I shall not trouble my readers with an account of it; and I believe was not so much designed by the Knight himself to inform the court, as to give him a figure in my eye, and keep up his credit in the country.

I was highly delighted, when the court rose, to see the gentlemen of the country gathering about my old friend, and striving who should compliment him most; at the sametime that the ordinary people gazed upon him at a distance, not a little admiring his courage, that was not afraid to speak to the judge.

In our return home we met with a very odd accident; which I cannot forbear relating, because it shews how desirous all who know Sir ROGER are of giving him marks of their esteem. When we were arrived upon the verge of his estate, we stopped at a little inn to rest ourselves and our horses. The man of the house had, it seems, been formerly a servant in the Knight's family; and to do honour to his old master, had sometime since, unknown to Sir ROGER, put him up in a sign-post before the door; so that the ***Knight's head*** had hung out upon the road about a week before he himself knew anything of the matter. As soon as Sir ROGER was acquainted with it, finding that his servant's indiscretion proceeded wholly from affection and good will, he only told him that he had made him too high a compliment; and when the fellow seemed to think that could hardly be, added with a more decisive look, that it was too great an honour for any man under a duke: but told him at the sametime, that it might be altered with a very few touches, and that he himself would be at the charge of it. Accordingly they got a painter by the Knight's directions to add a pair of whiskers to the face, and by a little aggravation to the features to change it into the *Saracen's head*. I should not have known this story had not the inn-keeper, upon Sir ROGER'S alighting, told him in my hearing, that his honour's head was brought back last night with the alterations that he had ordered to be made in it. Upon this my friend with his usual cheerfulness related the particulars abovementioned, and ordered the head to be brought into the room. I could not forbear discovering greater expressions of mirth than ordinary upon the appearance of this monstrous face, under which, notwithstanding it was made to frown and stare in a most extraordinary manner, I could still discover a distant resemblance of my old friend. Sir ROGER, upon seeing me laugh, desired me to tell him truly if I thought it possible for people to know him in that disguise. I at first kept my usual silence ; but upon the Knight's conjuring me to tell him whether it was not still more like himself than a *Saracen*, I composed my countenance in the best manner I could, and replied, that much might be said on both sides.

These several adventures, with the Knight's behaviour in them, gave me as pleasant a day as ever I met with in any of my travels.

XX.

As I was yesterday taking the air with my fried Sir ROGER, we were met by a fresh coloured ruddy young man, who rid by us full speed, with a couple of servants behind him. Upon my enquiry who he was, Sir ROGER told me that he was a young gentleman of a considerable estate, who had been educated by a tender mother that lives not many miles from the place where we were. She is a very good lady, says my friend, but took so much care of her son's health, that she has made him good for nothing. She quickly found that reading was bad for his eyes, and that writing made his head-ache. He was let loose among the woods as soon as he was able to ride on horseback, or to carry a gun upon his shoulder. To be brief, I found, by my friend's account of him, that he had got a great stock of health, but nothing else; and that if it were a man's business only to live, there would not be a more accomplished young fellow in the whole country.

The truth of it is, since my residing in these parts I have seen and heard innumerable instances of young heirs and elder brothers, who either from their own reflecting upon the estates they are born to, and therefore thinking all other accomplishments unnecessary, or from hearing these notions frequently inculcated to them by the flattery of their servants and domestics, or from the same foolish thought prevailing in those who have the care of their education, are of no manner of use but to keep up their families, and transmit their lands and houses in a line to posterity.

This makes me often think on a story I have heard of two friends, which I shall give my reader at large, under feigned names. The moral of it may, I hope, be useful, though there are some circumstances which make it rather appear like a novel, than a true story.

Eudoxus and *Leontine* began the world with small estates. They were both of them men of good sense and great virtue. They prosecuted their studies together in their earlier years, and entered into such a friendship as lasted to the end of their lives. *Eudoxus*, at his first setting out in the world, threw himself into a court, where by his natural endowments and his acquired abilities he made his way from one post to another, till at length he had raised a very considerable fortune. *Leontine* on the contrary sought all opportunities of improving his mind by study, conversation, and travel. He was not only acquainted with all the sciences, but with the most eminent professors of them troughout *Europe.* He knew perfectly well the interests of its princes, with the customs and fashions of their courts, and could scarce meet with the name of an extraordinary person in the *Gazette* whom he had not either talked to or seen. In short, he had so well mixt and digested his knowledge of men and books, that he made one of the most accomplished persons of his age. During the whole course of his studies and travels he kept up a punctual correspondence with *Eudoxus*, who often made himself acceptable to the principal men about court by the intelligence which he received from *Leontine.* When they were both turn'd of forty (an age in which, according to Mr. *Cowley*, there is no dallying with life) they determined, pursuant to the resolution they had taken in the beginning of their lives, to retire, and pass the remainder of their days in the country. In order to this, they both of them married much about the same time. *Leontine*, with his own and his wife's fortune, bought a farm of three hundred a year, which lay within the neighbourhood of his friend *Eudoxus*, who had purchased an estate of as many thousands. They were both of them *fathers* about the sametime, *Eudoxus* having a son born to him, and *Leontine* a daughter; but to the unspeakable grief of the latter, his young wife (in whom all his happiness was wrapt up) died in a few days after the birth of her daughter. His affliction would have been insupportable, had not he been comforted by the daily visits and conversation of his friend. As they were one day talking together with their usual intimacy, *Leontine*, considering how incapable he was of giving his daughter a proper education in his own house, and *Eudoxus* reflecting on the ordinary behaviour of a son who knows himself to be the heir of a great estate, they both agreed upon an exchange of children, namely that the boy should be bred up with *Leontine* as his son, and that the girl should live with *Eudoxus* as his daughter, till they were each of them arrived at years of discretion. The wife of *Eudoxus*, knowing that her son could not be so advantageously brought up as under the care of *Leontine*, and considering at the sametime that he would be perpetually under her own eye, was by degrees prevailed upon to fall in with the project. She therefore took *Leonilla*, for that was the name of the girl, and educated her as her own daughter. The two friends on each side had wrought themselves to such an habitual tenderness for the children who were under their direction, that each of them had the real passion of a father, where the title was but imaginary. *Florio*, the name of the young heir that lived with *Leontine*, though he had all the duty and affection imaginable for his supposed parent, was taught to rejoice at the sight of *Eudoxus*, who visited his friend very frequently, and was dictated by his natural affection, as well as by the rules of prudence, to make himself esteemed and beloved by *Florio*. The boy was now old enough to know his supposed father's circumstances, and that therefore he was to make his way in the world by his own industry. This consideration grew stronger in him every day, and produced so good an effect, that he applied himself with more than ordinary attention to the pursuit of everything which *Leontine* recommended to him. His natural abilities, which were very good, assisted by the directions of so excellent a counsellor, enabled him to make a quicker progress than ordinary through all the parts of his education.

Before he was twenty years of age, having finished his studies and exercises with great applause, he was removed from the university to the inns of court, where there are very few that make themselves considerable proficients in the studies of the place, who know they shall arrive at great estates without them. This was not *Florio's* case; he found that three hundred a year was but a poor estate for *Leontine* and himself to live upon, so that he studied without intermission till he gained a very good insight into the constitution and laws of his country.

I should have told my reader, that whilst *Florio* lived at the house of his foster-father, he was always an acceptable guest in the family of *Eudoxus*, where he became acquainted with *Leonilla* from her infancy. His acquaintance with her by degrees grew into love, which in a mind trained up in all the sentiments of honour and virtue became a very uneasy passion. He despaired of gaining an heiress of so great a fortune, and would rather have died than attempted it by any indirect methods. *Leonilla*, who was a woman of the greatest beauty joined with the greatest modesty, entertained at the sametime a secret passion for *Florio*, but conducted herself with so much prudence that she never gave him the least intimation of it. *Florio* was now engaged in all those arts nad improvements that are proper to raise a man's private fortune, and give him a figure in his country, but secretly tormented with that passion which burns with the greatest fury in a virtuous and noble heart, when he received a sudden summons from *Leontine* to repair to him into the country the next day. For it seems *Eudoxus* was so filled with the report of his son's reputation, that he could no longer withhold making himself known to him. The morning after his arrival at the house of his suppsod father, *Leontine* told him that *Eudoxus* had something of great importance to communicate to him; upon which the good man embraced him, and wept. *Florio* was no sooner arrived at the great house that stood in his neighbourhood, but *Eudoxus* took him by the hand, after the first salutes were over, and conducted him into his closet. He there opened to him the whole secret of his parentage and education, concluding after this manner: "I have no other way left of knowledging my gratitute to *Leontine*, than by marrying you to his daughter. He shall not lose the pleasure of being your father by the discovery I have made to you. *Leonilla* too shall be still my daughter; her filial piety, though misplaced, has been so exemplary that it deserves the greatest reward I can confer upon it. You shall have the pleasure of seeing a great estate fall to you, which you would have lost the relish of had you known yourself born to it. Continue only to deserve it in the same manner you did before you were possessed of it. I have left your mother in the next room. Her heart yearns towards you. She is making the same discoveries to *Leonilla* which I have made to yourself." *Florio* was so overwhelmed with this profusion of happiness, that he was not able to make a reply, but threw himself down at his father's feet, and amidst a flood of tears, kissed and embraced his knees, asking his blessing, and expressing in dumb show those sentiments of love, duty, and gratitute that were too big for utterance. To conclude, the happy pair were married, and half *Eudoxus's* estate settled upon them. *Leontine* and *Eudoxus* passed the remainder of their lives together; and received in the dutiful and affectionate behaviour of *Florio* and *Leonilla* the just recompense, as well as the natural effects of that care which they had bestowed upon them in their education.

XXI.

A man who publishes his works in a volume, has an infinite advantage over one who communicates his writings to the world in loose tracts and single pieces. We do not expect to meet with anything in a bulky volume, till after some heavy preamble, and several words of course, to prepare the reader for what follows: Nay, authors have established it as a kind of rule, that a man ought to be dull sometimes; as the most severe reader makes allowances for many rests and nodding places in a voluminous writer. This gave occasion to the famous *Greek* proverb which I have choosen for my motto, *that a great book is a great evil.*

On the contrary, those who publish their thoughts in distinct sheets, and as it were by piece-meal, have none of these advantages. We must immediately fall into our subject, and treat every part of it in a lively manner, or our papers are thrown by as dull and insipid: Our matter must lie close together, and either be wholly new in itself, or in the turn it receives from our expressions. Were the books of our best authors thus to be retailed to the public, and every page submitted to the tastes of forty or fifty thousand readers, I am afraid we should complain of many flat expressions, trivial observations, beaten topics, and common thoughts, which go off very well in the lump. At the sametime, notwithstanding some papers may be made up of broken hints and irregular sketches, it is often expected that every sheet should be a kind of treatise and make out in thought what it wants in bulk: That a point of humour should be worked up in all its parts; and a subject touched upon in its most essential articles, without the repetitions, tautologies and enlargements, that are indulged in longer labours. The ordinary writers of morality prescribe to their readers after the Galenic way; their medicines are made up in large quantities. An essay writer must practise in the chemical method, and give the virtue of a full draught in a few drops. Were all books reduced thus to their quintessence, many a bulky author would make his appearance in a penny paper: There would be scarce such a thing in nature as a folio. The works of an age would be contained on a few shelves; not to mention millions of volumes that would be utterly annihilated.

I cannot think that the difficulty of furnishing out separate papers of this nature, has hindered authors from communicating their thoughts to the world after such a manner: Though I must confess I am amazed that the press should be only made use of in this way by news writers, and the zealots of parties; as if it were not more advantageous to mankind, to be instructed in wisdom and virtue, than in politics; and to be made good fathers, husbands and sons, than counsellors and statesmen. Had the philosophers and great men of antiquity, who took so much pains in order to insrtuct mankind, and leave the world wiser and better than they found it; had they, I say, been possessed of the art of printing, there is no question but they would have made such an advantage of it, in dealing out their lectures to the public. Our common prints would be of great use were they thus calculated to diffuse good sense through the bulk of a people, to clear up their understandings, animate their minds with virtue, dissipate the sorrows of a heavy heart, or unbend the mind from its more severe employments with innocent amusements. When knowledge, instead of being bound up in books and kept in libraries and retirements, is thus obtruded upon the public; when it is canvassed in every assembly, and exposed upon every table, I cannot forbear reflecting upon that passage in the proverbs: Wisdom crieth without, she uttereth her voice in the streets: She crieth in the chief place of concourse, in the openings of the gates. In the city she uttereth her words, saying, how long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? And the scorners delight in their scorning? And fools hate knowledge?

The many letters which come to me from persons of the best sense in both sexes, (for I may pronounce their characters from their way of writing) do not a little encourage me in the prosecution of this my undertaking: Besides that my bookseller tells me, the demand for these my papers increases daily. It is at his instance that I shall continue my rural speculations to the end of this month; several having made up separate sets of them, as they have done before of those relating to wit, to operas, to points of morality, or subjects of humour.

I am not at all mortified, when sometimes I see my works thrown aside by men of no taste nor learning. There is a kind of heaviness and ignorance that hangs upon the minds of ordinary men, which is too thick for knowledge to break through. Their souls are not to be enlightened.

To these I must apply the fable of the mole, that after having consulted many oculists for the bettering of his sight, was at last provided with a good pair of spectacles; but upon his endeavouring to make use of them, his mother told him very prudently, 'That spectacles, though they might help the eye of a man, could be of no use to a mole.' It it not therefore for the benefit of moles that I publish these my daily Essays.

But besides such as are moles through ignorance, there are others who are moles through envy. As it is said in the *Latin* proverb, 'That one man is a wolf to another' so generally speaking, one author is a mole to another author. It is impossible for them to discover beauties in one another's works; they have eyes only for spots and blemishes: They can indeed see the light as it is said of the animals which are their namesakes, but the idea of it is painful to them; they immediately shut their eyes upon it, and withdraw themselves into a wilful obscurity. I have already caught two or three of these dark undermining vermin, and intend to make a string of them, in order to hang them up in one of my papers, as an example to all such voluntary moles.

XXII.

My worthy friend Sir ROGER, when we are talking of the malice of parties, very frequently tells us an accident that happened to him when he was a school boy, which was at a time when the feuds ran high between the Round Heads and Cavaliers. This worthy Knight, being then but a stripling, had occasion to enquire which was the way to St. *Anne's* Lane, upon which the person whom he spoke to, instead of answering his question, call'd him a young Popish Cur, and asked him who had made *Anne* a saint? The boy, being in some confusion, enquired of the next he met, which was the way to *Anne's* Lane; but was call'd a prick-eared cur for his pains, and instead of being shown the way, was told that she had been a saint before he was born, and would be one after he was hanged. "Upon this", says Sir ROGER, "I did not think fit to repeat the former question, but going into every lane of the neighbourhood, asked what they called the name of that lane". By which ingenious artifice he found out the place he enquired after, without giving offence to any party. Sir ROGER generally closes this narrative with reflections on the mischief that parties do in the country; how they spoil good neighbourhood, and make honest gentlemen hate one another; besides that they manifestly tend to the prejudice of the land tax, and the destruction of the game.

There cannot a greater judgment befal a country than such a dreadful spirit of division as rends a government into two distinct people, and makes them greater strangers and more averse to one another, than if they were actually two different nations. The effects of such a division are pernicious to the last degree, not only with regard to those advantages which they give the common enemy, but to those private evils which they produce in the heart of almost every particular person. This influence is very fatal both to men's morals and their understandings; it sinks the virtue of a nation, and not only so, but destroys even common sense.

A furious party spirit, when it rages in its full violence, exerts itself in civil war and bloodshed; and when it is under its greatest restraints naturally breaks out in falsehood, detraction, calumny, and a partial administration of justice. In a word, it fills a nation with spleen and rancour, and extinguishes all the seeds of good nature, compassion and humanity.

Plutarch says very finely, "that a man should not allow himself to hate even his enemies, because", says he, "if you indulge this passion in some occasions, it will rise of itself in others; if you hate your enemies, you will contract such a vicious habit of mind, as by degrees will break out upon those who are your friends, or those who are indifferent to you". I might here observe how admirable this precept of morality (which derives the malignity of hatred from the passion itself, and not from its object) answers to that great rule which was dictated to the world about an hundred years before this philosopher wrote; but instead of that, I shall only take notice, with a real grief of heart, that the minds of many good men among us appear soured with party principles, and alienated from one another in such a manner, as seems to me altogether inconsistent with the dictates either of reason or religion. Zeal for a public cause is apt to breed passions in the hearts of virtuous persons, to which the regard of their own private interest would never have betrayed them.

If this party spirit has so ill an effect on our morals, it has likewise a very great one upon our judgments. We often hear a poor insipid paper or pamphlet cried up, and sometimes a noble piece depreciated, by those who are of a different principle from the author. One who is actuated by this spirit is almost under an incapacity of discerning either real blemishes or beauties. A man of merit in a different principle, is like an object seen in two different mediums, that appears crooked or broken, however straight and entire it may be in itself. For this reason there is scarce a person of any figure in *England*, who does not go by two contrary characters, as opposite to one another as light and darkness. Knowledge and learning suffer in a particular manner from this strange prejudice, which at present prevails amongst all ranks and degrees in the *British* nation. As men formerly became eminent in learned societies by their parts and acquisitions, they now distinguish themselves by the warmth and violence with which they espouse their respective parties. Books are valued upon the like considerations: An abusive scurrilous style passes for satire, and a dull scheme of party notions is called fine writing.

There is one piece of sophistry practised by both sides, and that is the taking any scandalous story that has been ever whispered or invented of a private man, for a known undoubted truth, and raising suitable speculations upon it. Calumnies that have been never proved, or have been often refuted, are the ordinary postulatums of these infamous scribblers, upon which they proceed as upon first principles granted by all men, though in their hearts they know they are false, or at best very doubtful. When they have laid these foundations of scurrility, it is no wonder that their superstructure is every way answerable to them. If this shameless practice of the present age endures much longer, praise and reproach will cease to be motives of action in good men.

There are certain periods of time in all governments when this inhuman spirit prevails. *Italy* was long torn in pieces by the *Guelfes* and *Gibellins*, and *France* by those who were for and against the league : But it is very unhappy for a man to be born in such a stormy and tempestuous season. It is the restless ambition of artful men that thus breaks a people into factions, and draws several well meaning persons to their interest by a specious concern for their country. How many honest minds are filled with uncharitable and barbarous notions, out of their zeal for the public good ? What cruelties and outrages would they not commit against men of an adverse party, whom they would honour and esteem, if instead of considering them as they are represented, they knew them as they are ? Thus are persons of the greatest probity seduced into shameful errors and prejudices, and made bad men even by that noblest of principles, the love of their country. I cannot here forbear mentioning the famous Spanish proverb, if there were neither fools nor knaves in the world, all people would be of one mind.

For my own part, I could heartily wish that all honest men would enter into an association, for the support of one another against the endeavours of those whom they ought to look upon as their common enemies, whatsoever side they may belong to. Were there such an honest body of neutral forces, we should never see the worst of men in great figures of life, because they are useful to a party; nor the best unregarded, because they are above practising those methods which would be grateful to their faction. We should then single every criminal out of the herd, and hunt him down, however formidable and overgrown he might appear: On the contrary, we should shelter distressed innocence, and defend virtue, however beset with contempt or ridicule, envy or defamation. In short, we should not any longer regard our fellow subjects as whigs or tories, but should make the man of merit our friend, and the villain our enemy.

XXIII.

In my yesterday's paper I proposed, that the honest men of all parties should enter into a kind of association for the defence of one another, and the confusion of their common enemies. As it is designed this neutral body should act with a regard to nothing but truth and equity, and divest themselves of the little heats and prepossessions that cleave to parties of all kinds, I have prepared for them the following form of an association, which may express their intentions in the most plain and simple manner.

"We whose names are hereunto subscribed do solemnly declare, that we do in our consciences believe two and two make four; and that we shall adjudge any man whatsoever to be our enemy who endeavours to persuade us to the contrary. We are likewise ready to maintain, with the hazard of all that is near and dear to us, that six is less than seven in all times and all places; and that ten will not be more three years hence than it is at present. We do also firmly declare, that it is our resolution as long as we live to call black black, and white white. And we shall upon all occasions oppose such persons that upon any day of the year shall call black white, or white black, with the utmost peril of our lives and fortunes."

Were there such a combination of honest men, who without any regard to places would endeavour to extirpate all such furious zealots as would sacrifice one-half of their country to the passion and interest of the other; as also such infamous hypocrites, that are for promoting their own advantage, under colour of the public good; with all the profligate immoral retainers to each side, that have nothing to recommend them but an implicit submission to their leaders; we should soon see that furious party spirit extinguished, which may in time expose us to the derision and contempt of all the nations about us.

A member of this society, that would thus carefully employ himself in making room for merit, by throwing down the worthless and depraved part of mankind from those conspicuous stations of life to which they have been sometiomes advanced, and all this without any regard to his private interest, would be no small benefactor to his country.

I remember to have read in *Diodorus Siculus* an account of a very active little animal, which I think he calls the

Ichneumon, that makes it the whole business of his life to break the eggs of the crocodile, which he is always in search after. This instinct is the more remarkable, because the ***Ichneumon*** never feeds upon the eggs he has broken, nor in any other way finds his account in them. Were it not for the incessant labours of this industrious animal, ***Egypt,*** says the historian, would be over-run with crocodile; for the ***Egyptians*** are so far from destroying those pernicious creatures, that they worship them as gods.

If we look into the behaviour of ordinary partizans, we shall find them far from resembling this disinterested animal; and rather acting after the example of the wild ***Tartars,*** who are ambitious of destroying a man of the most extraordinary parts and accomplishments, as thinking that upon his decease the same talents, whatever post they qualified him for, enter of course into his destroyer.

As in the whole train of my speculations, I have endeavoured as much as I am able to extinguish that pernicious spirit of passion and prejudice, which rages with the same violence in all parties, I am still the more desirous of doing some good in this particular, because I observe that the spirit of party reigns more in the country than in the town. It here contracts a kind of brutality and rustic fierceness, to which men of a politer conversation are wholly strangers. It extends itself even to the return of the bow and the hat; and at the sametime that the heads of parties preserve toward one another an outward show of good breeding, and keep up a perpetual intercourse of civilities, their tools that are dispersed in these outlying parts will not so much as mingle together at a cock match. This humour fills the country with several periodical meetings of Whig jockies and

Tory fox hunters; not to mention the innumerable curses, frowns, and whispers it produces at a quarter sessions.

I do not know whether I have observed in any of my former papers, that my friends Sir ROGER DE COVERLEY and Sir ANDREW FREEPORT are of different principles, the first of them inclined to the *landed* and the other to the *monied* interest. This humour is so moderate in each of them, that it proceeds no farther than to an agreeable raillery, which very often diverts the rest of the club. I find however that the Knight is a much stronger Tory in the country than in town, which, as he has told me in my ear, is absolutely necessary for the keeping up his interest. In all our journey from *London* to his house we did not so much as bait at a whig inn; or if by chance the coachman stopped at a wrong place, one of Sir ROGER'S servants would ride up to his master full speed, and whisper to him that the master of the house was against such an one in the last election. This often betray'd us into hard beds and bad cheer; for we were not so inquisitive about the inn as the inn-keeper; and, provided our landlord's principles were sound, did not take any notice of the staleness of his provisions. This I found still the more inconvenient, because the better the host was, the worse generally were his accommodations; the fellow knowing very well, that those who were his friends would take up with coarse diet and an hard lodging. For these reasons, all the while I was upon the road I dreaded entering into an house of any one that Sir ROGER had applauded for an honest man.

Since my stay at Sir ROGER'S in the country, I daily find more instances of this narrow party humour. Being upon the bowling green at a neighbouring market town the other day, (for that is the place where the gentlemen of one side meet once a week) I observed a stranger among them of a better presence and genteeler behaviour than ordinary; but was much surprised, that notwithstanding he was a very fair Bettor, nobody would take him up. But upon enquiry I found, that he was one who had given a disagreeable vote in a former parliament, for which reason there was not a man upon that bowling green who would have so much correspondence with him as to win his money of him.

Among other instances of this nature, I must not omit one which concerns myself. *Will Wimble* was the other day relating several strange stories that he had picked up nobody knows where of a certain great man; and upon my staring at him, as one that was surprised to hear such things in the country, which had never been so much as whispered in the town, *Will.* stopped short in the thread of his discourse, and after dinner asked my friend Sir ROGER in his ear if he was sure that I was not a fanatic.

It gives me a serious concern to see such a spirit of dissension in the country; not only as it destroys virtue and common sense, and renders us in a manner barbarians towards one another, but as it perpetuates our animosities, widens our breaches, and transmits our present passions and prejudices to our posterity. For my own part, I am sometimes afraid that I discover the seeds of a civil war in these our divisions; and therefore cannot but bewail, as in their first principles, the miseries and calamities of our children.

XXIV.

It is our custom at Sir ROGER'S, upon the coming in of the post, to sit about a pot of coffee, and hear the old Knight read Dyer's letter; which he does with his spectacles upon his nose, and in an audible voice, smiling very often at those little strokes of satire which are so frequent in the writings of that author. I afterwards communicate to the Knight such packets as I receive under the quality of **Spectator**. The following letter chancing to please him more than ordinary, I shall publish it at his request.

Mr. Spectator,

'You have diverted the town almost a whole month at the expense of the country, it is now high time that you should give the country their revenge. Since your withdrawing from this place, the fair sex are run into great extravagancies. Their petticoats, which began to heave and swell before you left us, are now blown up into a most enormous concave, and rise every day more and more: In short, Sir, since our women know themselves to be out of the eye of the **Spectator**, they will be kept within no compass. You praised them a little too soon, for the modesty of their head dresses; for as the humour of a sick person is often driven out of one limb into another, their superfluity of ornaments, instead of being entirely banished, seems only fallen from their heads upon their lower parts. What they have lost in height they make up in breadth, and contrary to all rules of architecture widen the foundations at the sametime that they shorten the superstructure. Were they, like *Spanish* jennets, to impregnate by the wind they could not have thought on a more proper invention. But as we do not yet hear any particular use in this petticoat, or that it contains anything more than what was supposed to be in those of scantier make, we are wonderfully at a loss about it.

The women give out, in defence of these wide bottoms, that they are airy, and very proper for the season; but this I look upon to be only a pretence, and a piece of art, for it is well known we have not had a more moderate summer these many years, so that it is certain the heat they complain of cannot be in the weather: Besides, I would fain ask these tender constitutioned ladies, why they should require more cooling than their mothers before them.

I find several speculative persons are of opinion that our sex has of late years been very saucy, and that the hoop petticoat is made use of to keep us at a distance. It is most certain that a woman's honour cannot be better entrenched than after this manner, in circle within circle, amidst such a variety of out works and lines of circumvallation. A female who is thus invested in whale bone is sufficiently secured against the approaches of an ill-bred fellow, who might as well think of Sir GEORGE ETHEREGE'S way of making love in a tub, as in the midst of so many hoops.

Among these various conjectures, there are men of superstitious tempers, who look upon the hoop petticoat as a kind of prodigy. Some will have it that it portends the downfall of the French King, and observe that the farthingale appeared in *England* a little before the ruin of the *Spanish* monarchy. Others are of opinion that it foretels battle and bloodshed, and believe it of the same prognostication as the tail of a blazing star. For my part, I am apt to think it is a sign that multitudes are coming into the world rather than going out of it.

The first time I saw a lady dressed in one of these petticoats, I could not forbear blaming her in my own thoughts for walking abroad when she was so near her time, but soon recovered myself out of my error, when I found all the modish part of the sex as far gone as herself. It is generally thought some crafty women have thus betrayed their companions into hoops, that they might make them accessory to their own concealments, and by that means escape the censure of the world; as wary generals have sometimes dressed two or three dozen of their friends in their own habit, that they might not draw upon themselves any particular attacks of the enemy. The strutting petticoat smooths all distinctions, levels the mother with the daughter, and sets maids and matrons, wives and widows, upon the same bottom. In the mean while I cannot but be troubled to see so many well-shaped innocent virgins bloated up, and waddling up and down like big bellied women.

Should this fashion get among the ordinary people our public ways would be so crowded that we should want street room. Several congregations of the best fashion find themselves already very much straitened, and if the mode encrease I wish it may not drive many ordinary women into meetings and conventicles. Should our sex at the sametime take it into their heads to wear trunk breeches (as who knows what their indignation at this female treatment may drive them to) a man and his wife would fill a whole pew.

You know, Sir, it is recorded of *Alexander* the great, that in his *Indian* expedition he buried several suits of armour, which by his direction were made much too big for any of his soldiers, in order to give posterity an extraordinary idea of him, and make them believe he had commanded an army of giants. I am persuaded that if one of the present petticoats happen to be hung up in any repository of curiosities, it will lead into the same error the generations that lie some removes from us: Unless we can believe our posterity will think so disrespectfully of their great grand mothers, that they made themselves monstrous to appear amiable.

When I survey this new fashioned *Rotonda* in all its parts, I cannot but think of the old philosopher, who after having entered into an *Egyptian* temple, and looked about for the idol of the place, at length discovered a little black monkey enshrined in the midst of it, upon which he could not forbear crying out, (to the great scandal of the worshippers) what a magnificent palace is here for such a ridiculous inhabitant!

Though you have taken a resolution, in one of your papers, to avoid descending to particularities of dress, I believe you will not think it below you, on so extraordinary an occasion, to unhoop the fair sex, and cure this fashionable tympany that is got among them. I am apt to think the petticoat will shrink of its own accord at your first coming to town; at least a touch of your pen will make it contract itself, like the sensitive plant, and by that means oblige several who are either terrified or astonished at this portentous novelty, and among the rest'.

Your humble servant, &c.

XXV.

Women in their nature are much more gay and joyous than men; whether it be that their blood is more refined, their fibres more delicate, and their animal spirits more light and volatile; or whether, as some have imagined, there may not be a kind of sex in the very soul, I shall not pretend to determine. As vivacity is the gift of women, gravity is that of men. They should each of them therefore keep a watch upon the particular bias which nature has fixed in their mind, that it may not draw too much, and lead them out of the paths of reason. This will certainly happen, if the one in every word and action affects the character of being rigid and severe, and the other of being brisk and airy. Men should beware of being captivated by a kind of savage philosophy, women by a thoughtless gallantry. Where these precautions are not observed, the man often degenerates into a cynic, the woman into a coquette; the man grows sullen and morose, the woman impertinent and fantastical.

By what I have said, we may conclude, men and women were made as counterparts to one another, that the pains and anxieties of the husband might be relieved by the sprightliness and good humour of the wife. When these are rightly tempered, care and cheerfulness go hand in hand; and the family, like a ship that is duly trimmed, wants neither sail nor ballast.

Natural historians observe, (for whilst I am in the country I must fetch my allusions from thence) that only the male birds have voices; that their sons being a little before breeding time, and end a little after: That whilst the hen is covering her eggs, the male generally takes his stand upon a neighbouring bough within her hearing; and by that means amuses and diverts her with his songs during the whole time of her sitting.

This contract among birds lasts no longer than till a brood of young ones arises from it; so that in the feather'd kind, the cares and fatigues of the married states, if I may so call it, lie principally upon the female. On the contrary, as in our species the man and the woman are joined together for life, and the main burden rests upon the former, nature has given all the little arts of soothing and blandishment to the female, that she may cheer and animate her companion in a constant and assiduous application to the making a provision for his family, and the educating of their common children. This however is not to be taken so strictly, as if the same duties were not often reciprocal, and incumbent on both parties ; but only to set forth what seems to have been the general intention of nature, in the different inclinations and endowments which are bestowed on the different sexes.

But whatever was the reason that man and woman were made with this variety of temper, if we observe the conduct of the fair sex, we find that they choose rather to associate themselves with a person who resembles them in that light and volatile humour which is natural to them, than to such as are qualified to moderate and counterbalance it. It has been an old complaint, that the coxcomb carries it with them before the man of sense. When we see a fellow loud and talkative, full of insipid life and laughter, we may venture to pronounce him a female favourite : Noise and flutter are such accomplishments as they cannot withstand. To be short, the passion of an ordinary woman for a man is nothing else but self-love diverted upon another object : She would have the lover a woman in everything but the sex. I do not know a finer piece of satire on this part of womankind, than those lines of Mr. DRYDEN,

Our thoughtlesss sex is caught by outward form,
And empty noise, and loves itself in man.

This is a source of infinite calamities to the sex, as it frequently joins them to men, who in their own thoughts are as fine creatures as themselves ; or if they chance to be good humoured, serve only to dissipate their fortunes, inflame their follies, and aggravate their indiscretions.

The same female levity is no less fatal to them after marriage than before: It represents to their imaginations the faithful prudent husband as an honest tractable and domestic animal; and turns their thoughts upon the fine gay gentleman that laughs, sings, and dresses so much more agreeably.

As this irregular vivacity of temper leads astray the hearts of ordinary women in the choice of their lovers and the treatment of their husbands, it operates with the same pernicious influence towards their children, who are taught to accomplish themselves in all those sublime perfections that appear captivating in the eye of their mother. She admires in her son what she loved in her gallant; and by that means contributes all she can to perpetuate herself in a worthless progeny.

The younger *Faustina* was a lively instance of this sort of woman. Notwithstanding she was married to *Marcus Aurelius*, one of the greatest, wisest, and best of the *Roman* Emperors, she thought a common gladiator much the prettier gentleman; and had taken such care to accomplish her son *Commodus* according to her own notions of a fine man, that when he ascended the throne of his father, he became the most foolish and abandoned tyrant that was ever placed at the head of the *Roman* Empire, signalizing himself in nothing but the fighting of prizes, and knocking out men's brains. As he had no taste of true glory, we see him in several medals and statues which are still extant of him, equipped like an *Herculis* with a club and a lion's skin.

I have been led into this speculation by the characters I have heard of a country gentleman and his lady, who do not live many miles from Sir ROGER. The wife is an old coquet, that is always hankering after the diversions of the town: the husband a morose rustic, that frowns and frets at the name of it. The wife is overrun with affectation, the husband sunk into brutality: The lady cannot bear the noise of the larks and nightingales, hates your tedious summer days, and is sick at the sight of shady woods and purling streams; the husband wonders how anyone can be pleased with the fooleries of plays and operas, and rails from morning to night at essenced fops and tawdry courtiers. The children are educated in these different notions of their parents. The sons follow the father about his grounds, while the daughters read volumes of love letters and romances to their mother. By this means it comes to pass, that the girls look upon their father as a clown, and the boys think their mother no better than she should be.

How different are the lives of *Aristus* and *Aspasia*? the innocent vivacity of the one is tempered and composed by the cheerful gravity of the other. The wife grows wise by the discourses of the husband, and the husband good humour'd by the conversations of the wife. *Aristus* would not be so amiable were it not for his *Aspasia*, nor *Aspasia* so much esteemed were it not for her *Aristus*. Their virtues are blended in their children, and diffuse through the whole family a perpetual spirit of benevolence, complacency, and satisfaction.

XXVI.

Great masters in painting never care for drawing people in the fashion; as very well knowing that the head dress, or periwig, that now prevails, and gives a grace to their portraitures at present, will make a very odd figure, and perhaps look monstrous in the eyes of poet. For this reason they often represent an illustrious poet in a *Roman* habit, or in some other dress that never varies. I could wish, for the sake of my country friends, that there was such a kind of everlasting drapery to be made use of by all who live at a certain distance from the town, and that they would agree upon such fashions as should never be liable to changes and innovations. For want of this standing dress, a man who takes a journey into the country is as much surprised, as one who walks in a gallery of old family pictures; and finds as great a variety of garbs and habits in the persons he converses with. Did they keep to one constant dress they would sometimes be in the fashion, which they never are as matters are managed at present. If instead of running after the mode, they would continue fixed in one certain habit, the mode would sometime or other overtake them, as a clock that stands still is sure to point right once in twelve hours: In this case therefore I would advise them, as a gentleman did his friend who was hunting about the whole town after a rambling fellow. If you follow him you will never find him, but if you plant yourself at the corner of anyone street, I'll engage it will not be long before you see him.

I have already touched upon this subject in a speculation which shows how cruelly the country are led astray in following the town; and equipped in a ridiculous habit, when they fancy themselves in the height of the mode. Since that speculation I have received a letter which I there hinted at from a gentleman who is now in the western circuit.

Mr. Spectator,

'Being a lawyer of the *middle temple*, a *cornishman* by birth, I generally ride the western circuit for my health, and as I am not interrupted with clients, have leisure to make many observations that escape the notice of my fellow travellers.

One of the most fashionable women I met with in all the circuit was my landlay at *Stains*, where I chanced to be on a holiday. Her commode was not half a foot high, and her petticoat within some yards of a modish circumference. In the same place I observed a young fellow with a tolerable Periwig, had it not been covered with a hat that was shaped in the *Ramillie* Cock. As I proceeded in my journey I observed the petticoat grew scantier and scantier, and about threescore miles from *London* was so very unfashionable, that a woman might walk in it without any manner of inconvenience.

Not far from *Salisbury* I took notice of a justice of peace's lady who was at least ten years behindhand in her dress, but at the sametime as fine as hands could make her. She was flounced and furbelowed from head to foot; every ribbon was wrinkled, and every part of her garments in curl, so that she looked like one of those animals which in the country we call a *Friezeland* hen.

Not many miles beyond this place I was informed that one of the last year's little muffs had by some means or other straggled into those parts, and that all women of fashion were cutting their old muffs in two, or retrenching them, according to the little model which was got among them. I cannot believe the report they have there, that it was sent down frank'd by a parliament man in a little packet; but probably by next winter this fashion will be at the height in the country, when it is quite out at *London.*

The greatest beau at our next county sessions was dressed in a most monstrous flaxen Periwig, that was made in King *William's* reign. The wearer of it goes, it seems, in his own hair, when he is at home, and lets hiw wig lie in buckle for a whole half year, that he may put it on upon occasions to meet the judges in it.

I must not here omit an adventure which happened to us in a country church upon the frontiers of *Cornwall.* As we were in the midst of the service, a lady who is the chief woman of the place, and had passed the winter at *London* with her husband, entered the congregation in a little head dress, and a hoop'd petticoat. The people, who were wonderfully startled at such a sight, all of them rose up. Some stared at the prodigious bottom, and some at the little top of this strange dress. In the meantime the lady of the manor filled the area of the church, and walked up to her pew with an unspeakable satisfaction, amidst the whispers, conjectures, and astonishments of the whole congregation.

Upon our way from hence we saw a young fellow riding towards us full gallop, with a bob wig and a black silken bag tied to it. He stopt short at the coach, to ask us how far the judges were behind us. His stay was so very short, that we had only time to observe his new silk waistcoat, which was unbotton'd in several places to let us see that he had a clean shirt on, which was ruffled down to his middle.

From this place, during our progress through the most western parts of the kingdom, we fancied ourselves in King *Charles* the second's reign, the people having made very little variations in their dress since that time. The smartest of the country Squires appear still in the *Monmonth* Cock, and when they go a wooing (whether they have any post in the militia or not) they generally put on a red coat. We were, indeed, very much surprised, at the place we lay at last night, to meet with a gentleman that had accoutered himself in a night-cap wig a coat with long pockets, and slit sleeves, and a pair of shoes with high scollop tops; but we soon found by his conversation that he was a person who laughed at the ignorance and rusticity of the country people, and was resolved to live and die in the mode.

Sir, if you think this account of my travels may be of any advantage to the public, I will next year trouble you with such occurrences as I shall meet with in other parts of *England*. For I am informed there are greater curiosities in the northern circuit than in the western; and that a fashion makes its progress much slower into *Cumberland* than into *Cornwall*. I have heard in particular, that the Steenkirk arrived but two months ago at *Newcastle*, and that there are several commodes in those parts which are worth taking a journey thither to see.'

XXVII.

As I was yesterday riding out in the fields with my friend Sir ROGER, we saw at a little distance from us a troop of gypsies. Upon the first discovery of them, my friend was in some doubt whether he should not exert the justice of the peace upon such a band of lawless vagrants; but not having his clerk with him, who is a necessary counsellor on these occasions, and fearing that his poultry might fare the worse for it, he let the thought drop: But at the sametime gave me a particular account of the mischiefs they do in the country, in stealing people's goods and spoiling their servants. If a stray piece of linen hangs upon an hedge, says Sir ROGER, they are sure to have it; if a hog loses his way in the fields, it is ten to one but he becomes their prey; our geese cannot live in peace for them; if a man prosecutes them with severity, his henroost is sure to pay for it: They generally straggle into these parts about this time of the year; and set the heads of our servant maids so agog for husbands, that we do not expect to have any business done as it should be whilst they are in the country. I have an honest dairy maid who crosses their hands with a piece of silver every summer, and never fails being promised the handsomest young fellow in the Parish for her pains. Your friend the butler has been fool enough to be seduced by them; and, though he is sure to lose a knife, a fork, or a spoon every time his fortune is told him, generally shuts himself up in the pantry with an old gypsy for above half an hour once in a twelvemonth. Sweet hearts are the things they live upon, which they bestow very plentifully upon all those that apply themselves to them. You see now and then some handsome young jades among them: The sluts have very often white teeth and black eyes.

Sir ROGER observing that I listened with great attention to his account of a people who were so entirely new to me, told me, that if I would they should tell us our fortunes. As I was very well pleased with the Knight's proposal, we rid up and communicated our hands to them. A Cassandra of the crew, after having examined my lines very diligently, told me, that I loved a pretty maid in a corner, that I was a good woman's man, with some other particulars which I do not think proper to relate. My friend Sir ROGER alighted from his horse, and exposing his palm to two or three of them that stood by him, they crumpled it into all shapes, and diligently scanned every wrinkle that could be made in it; when one of them, who was elder and more sun burnt than the rest, told him, that he had a widow in his line of life: Upon which the Knight cried, 'go, go, you are an idle baggage'; and at the same time smiled upon me. The gypsies finding he was not displeased in his heart, told him, after a farther enquiry into his hand, that his true love was constant, and that she should dream of him to-night: My old friend cried Pish, and bid her go on. The gypsy told him that he was a bachelor, but would not be so long: and that he was dearer to some body than he thought: The Knight still repeated, she was an idle baggage, and bid her go on. 'Ah master', says the gypsy, 'that roguish leer of yours makes a pretty woman's heart ache; you ha'n't that simper about the mouth for nothing'—the uncouth gibberish with which all this was uttered like the darkness of an oracle, made us the more attentive to it. To be short, the Knight left the money with her that he had crossed her hand with, and got up again on his horse.

As we were riding away, Sir ROGER told me, that he knew several sensible people who believed these gypsies now and then foretold very strange things; and for half an hour together appeared more jocund than ordinary. In the height of his good humour, meeting a common beggar upon the road who was no conjurer, as he went to relieve him he found his pocket was picked: That being a kind of palmistry at which this race of vermin are very dexterous.

I might here entertain my reader with historical remarks on this idle profligate people, who infest all the countries of *Europe*, and live in the midst of governments in a kind of commonwealth by themselves. But instead of entering into observations of this nature, I shall fill the remaining part of my paper with a story which is still fresh in *Holland*, and was printed in one of our monthly accounts about twenty years ago. 'As the *Trekshchuyt*, or hackney boat, which carries passengers from *Leyden* to *Amsterdam*, was putting off, a boy running along the side of the Canal desired to be taken in; which the master of the boat refused, because the lad had not quite money enough to pay the usual fare. An eminent merchant being pleased with the looks of the boy, and secretly touched with compassion towards him, paid the money for him, and ordered him to be taken on board. Upon talking with him afterwards, he found that he could speak readily in three or four languages, and learned upon farther examination that he had been stolen away when he was a child by a gypsy, and had rambled ever since with a gang of those strollers up and down several parts of *Europe*. It happened that the merchant, whose heart seems to have inclined towards the boy by a secret kind of instinct, had himself lost a child some years before. The parents, after a long search for him, gave him for drowned in one of the canals with which that country abounds; and the mother was so afflicted at the loss of a fine boy, who was her only son, that she died for grief of it. Upon laying together all particulars, and examining the several moles and marks by which the mother used to describe the child when he was first missing, the boy proved to be the son of the merchant whose heart had so unaccountably melted at the sight of him. The lad was very well pleased to find a father who was so rich, and likely to leave him a good estate; the father on the other hand was not a little delighted to see a son return to him, whom he had given for lost, with such a strength of constitution, sharpness of understanding, and skill in languages'. Here the printed story leaves off; but if I may give credit to reports, our linguist having received such extraordinary rudiments towards a good education, was afterwards trained up in everything that becomes a gentleman; wearing off by little and little all the vicious habits and practices that he had been used to in the course of his peregrinations: Nay, it is said, that he has since been employed in foreign courts upon national business, with great reputation to himself and honour to those who sent him, and that he has visited several countries as a public minister, in which he formerly wander'd as a gypsy.

XXVIII.

It is usual for a man who loves country sports to preserve the game in his own grounds, and divert himself upon those that belong to his neighbour. My friend Sir ROGER generally goes two or three miles from his house, and gets into the frontiers of his estate, before he beats about in search of a hare or partridge, on purpose to spare his own fields, where he is always sure of finding diversion, when the worst comes to the worst. By this means the breed about his house has time to increase and multiply, besides that the sport is the more agreeable where the game is the harder to come at, and where it does not lie so thick as to produce any perplexity or confusion in the pursuit. For these reasons the country gentleman, like the fox, seldom preys near his own home.

In the same manner I have made a month's excursion out of the town, which is the great field of game for sportsman of my species, to try my fortune in the country, where I have started several subjects, and hunted them down, with some pleasure to myself, and I hope to others. I am here forced to use a great deal of diligence before I can spring anything to my mind, whereas in town, whilst I am following one character, it is ten to one but I am crossed in my way by another, and put up such a variety of odd creatures in both sexes, that they foil the scent of one another, and puzzle the chase. My greatest difficulty in the country is to find sport, and in town to choose it. In the meantime, as I have given a whole month's rest to the cities of *London* and *Westminster*, I promise myself abundance of new game upon my return thither.

It is indeed high time for me to leave the country, since I find the whole neighbourhood begin to grow very inquisitive after my name and character. My love of solitude, taciturnity, and particular way of life, having raised a great curiosity in all these parts.

The notions which have been framed of me are various; some look upon me as very proud, some as very modest, and some as very melancholy. *Will. Wimble*, as my friend the butler tells me, observing me very much alone, and extremely silent when I am in company, is afraid I have killed a man. The country people seem to suspect me for a conjurer: and some of them hearing of the visit which I made to *Moll White*, will needs have it that Sir ROGER has brought down a cunning man with him, to cure the old woman, and free the country from her charms. So that the character which I go under in part of the neighbourhood, is what they here call a *White Witch*.

A justice of peace, who lives about five miles off, and is not of Sir ROGER'S party, has it seems said twice or thrice at his table, that he wishes Sir ROGER does not harbour a jesuit in his house, and that he thinks the gentlemen of the country would do very well to make me give some account of myself.

On the other side, some of Sir ROGER'S friends are afraid the old Knight is impos'd upon by a designing fellow, and as they have heard that he converses very promiscuously when he is in town, do not know but he has brought down with him some discarded Whig, that is sullen, and says nothing, because he is out of place.

Such is the variety of opinions which are here entertained of me, so that I pass among some for a disaffected person, and among others for a popish priest; among some for a wizard, and among others for a murderer; and all this for no other reason, that I can imagine, but because I do not hoot and hollow and make a noise. It is true my friend Sir ROGER tells them, that it is my way, and that I am only a philosopher; but this will not satisfy them. They think there is more in me than he discovers, and that I do not hold my tongue for nothing.

For these and other reasons I shall set out for *London* to-morrow, having found by experience that the country is not a place for a person of my temper, who does not love jollity, and what they call good neighbourhood. A man that is out of humour when an unexpected guest breaks in upon him, and does not care for sacrificing an afternoon to every chance comer; that will be the master of his own time, and the pursuer of his own inclinations, makes but a very unsociable figure in this kind of life. I shall therefore retire into the town, if I may make use of that phrase, and get into the crowd again as fast as I can, in order to be alone. I can there raise what speculations I please upon others without being observed myself, and at the sametime enjoy all the advantages of company with all the privileges of solitude. In the meanwhile, to finish the month and conclude these my rural speculations, I shall here insert a letter from my friend WILL. HONEYCOMB, who has not lived a month for these forty years out of the smoke of London, and rallies me after his way upon my country life.

Dear SPEC,

'I suppose this letter will find thee picking up daisies, or smelling to a lock of hay, or passing away thy time in some innocent country diversion of the like nature. I have however orders from the club to summon thee up to town, being all of us cursedly afraid thou wilt not be able to relish our company, after thy conversations with *Moll White* and *Will. Wimble.* Pr'y thee don't send us up any more stories of a cock and a bull, nor frighten the town with spirits and witches. Thy speculations begin to smell confoundedly of woods and meadows. If thou dost not come up quickly, we shall conclude that thou art in love with one of Sir ROGER'S dairy maids. Service to the Knight. Sir ANDREW is grown the cock of the club since he left us, and if he does not return quickly will make every mother's son of us commonwealth's men.'

Dear SPEC,
Thine Eternally,
WILL. HONEYCOMB.

XXIX.

Having notified to my good friend Sir ROGER that I should set out for London the next day, his horses were ready at the appointed hour in the evening; and attended by one of his grooms, I arrived at the country town at twilight, in order to be ready for the stage coach the day following. As soon as we arrived at the inn, the servant who waited upon me, inquir'd of the chamberlain in my hearing what company he had for the coach? The fellow answered, Mrs. BETTY ARABLE, the great fortune, and the widow her mother; a recruiting officer (who took a place because they were to go); young Squire Quickset her cousin (that her mother wished her to be married to); Ephraim the Quaker, her guardian; and a gentleman that had studied himself dumb from Sir ROGER DE COVERLEY'S. I observed by what he said of myself, that according to his office he dealt much in intelligence; and doubted not but there was some foundation for his reports of the rest of the company, as well as for the whimsical account he gave of me. The next morning at day-break we were all called; and I, who know my own natural shyness, and endeavour to be as little liable to be disputed with as possible, dressed immediately, that I might make no one wait. The first preparation for our setting out was, that the captain's half pike was placed near the coachman, and a drum behind the coach. In the meantime the drummer, the captain's equipage, was very loud, that none of the captain's things should be placed so as to be spoiled; upon which his cloak bag was fixed in the seat of the coach: And the captain himself, according to a frequent, tho' invidious behaviour of military men, ordered his man to look sharp, that none but one of the ladies should have the place he had taken fronting to the coach box.

We were in some little time fixed in our seats, and sat with that dislike which people not too good natured usually conceive of each other at first sight. The coach jumbled us insensibly into some sort of familiarity: And we had not moved above two miles, when the widow asked the captain what success he had in his recruiting? The officer, with a frankness he believed very graceful, told her, 'that indeed he had but very little luck, and had suffered much by desertion, therefore should be glad to end his warfare in the service of her or her fair daughter. In a word, continued he, I am a soldier, and to be plain is my character: You see me, madam, young, sound, and impudent; take me yourself, widow, or give me to her, I will be wholly at your disposal. I am a soldier of fortune, ha!' This was followed by a vain laugh of his own, and a deep silence of all the rest of the company. I had nothing left for it but to fall fast asleep, which I did with all speed. 'Come', said he, 'resolve upon it, we will make a wedding at the next town: We will make this pleasant companion who is fallen asleep, to be the brideman, and' (giving the Quaker a clap on the knee) he concluded, "this sly saint, who, I'll warrant, understands what's what as well as you, or I, widow, shall give the bride as father'. The Quaker, who happened to be a man of smartness, answered, 'friend, I take it in good part that thou hast given me the authority of a father over this comely and virtuous child; and I must assure thee, that if I have the giving her, I shall not bestow her on thee. Thy mirth, friend, savoureth of folly: Thou art a person of a light mind; thy drum is a type of thee, it soundeth because it is empty. Verily, it is not from thy fullness, but thy emptiness that thou hast spoken this day. Friend, friend we have hired this coach in partnership with thee, to carry us to the great city; we cannot go any other way. This worthy mother must hear thee if thou wilt needs utter thy follies; we cannot help it, friend, I say: If thou wilt we must hear thee: But if thou wert a man of understanding, thou wouldst not take advantage of thy courageous countenance to abash us children of peace. Thou art, thou sayest, a soldier; give quarter to us, who cannot resist thee. Why didst thou fleer at our friend, who feigned himself asleep? He said nothing: But how dost thou know what he containeth? If thou speakest improper things in the hearing of this virtuous young virgin, consider it as an outrage against a distressed person that cannot get from thee: To speak indiscreetly what we are obliged to hear, by being hasped up with thee in this public vehicle, is in some degree assaulting on the high road.'

Here Ephraim passed, and the captain with an happy and uncommon impudence (which can be convicted and support itself at the same time) cries, 'faith, friend, I thank thee; I should have been a little impertinent if thou hadst not reprimanded me. Come, thou art, I see, a smoky old fellow, and I'll be very orderly the ensuing part of my journey. I was going to give myself airs, but, ladies, I beg pardon.'

The captain was so little out of humour, and our company was so far from being soured by this little ruffle, that Ephraim and he took a particular delight in being agreeable to each other for the future; and assumed their different provinces in the conduct of the company. Our reckonings, apartments, and accommodation, fell under Ephraim: And the captain looked to all disputes on the road, as the good behaviour of our coachman, and the right we had of taking place as going to London of all vehicles coming from thence. The occurrences we met with were ordinary, and very little happened which could entertain by the relation of them: but when I consider'd the company we were in, I took it for no small good fortune that the whole journey was not spent in impertinencies, which to one part of us might be an entertainment, to the other a suffering. What therefore Ephraim said when we were almost arriv'd at London, had to me an air not only of good understanding but good breeding. Upon the young lady's expressing her satisfaction in the journey, and declaring how delightful it had been to her, Ephraim delivered himself as follows: 'There is no ordinary part of human life which expresseth so much a good mind, and a right inward man, as his behaviour upon meeting with strangers, especially such as may seem the most unsuitable companions to him: Such a man, when he falleth in the way with persons of simplicity and innocence, however knowing he may be in the ways of men, will not vaunt himself thereof; but will the rather hide his superiority to them, that he may not be painful unto them. My good friend, (continued he, turning to the officer) thee and I are to part by and by, and peradventure we may never meet again: But be advised by a plain man; modes and apparel are but trifles to the real man, therefore do not think such a man as thyself terrible for thy garb, nor such a one as me contemptible for mine. When two such as thee and I meet, with affections such as we ought to have towards each other, thou shouldst rejoice to see my peaceable demeanour, and I should be glad to see thy strength and ability to protect me in it.'

XXX.

I was this morning surprised with a great knocking at the door, when my Landlady's daughter came up to me, and told me, that there was a man below desired to speak with me. Upon my asking her who it was, she told me it was a very grave elderly person, but that she did not know his name. I immediately went down to him, and found him to be the coachman of my worthy friend Sir ROGER DE COVERLEY. He told me that his master came to town last night, and would be glad to take a turn with me in Gray's inn walks. As I was wondering in myself what had brought Sir ROGER to town, not having lately received any letter from him, he told me that his master was come up to get a sight of Prince Eugene, and that he desired I would immediately meet him.

I was not a little pleased with the curiosity of the old Knight, though I did not much wonder at it, having heard him say more than once in private discourse, that he looked upon Prince Eugenio (for so the Knight always calls him) to be a greater man than Scanderbeg.

I was no sooner come into Grays inn walks, but I heard my friend upon the terrace hemming twice or thrice to himself with great vigour, for he loves to clear his pipes in good air (to make use of his own phrase) and is not a little pleased with any one who takes notice of the strength which he still exerts in his morning hems.

I was touched with a secret joy at the sight of the good old man, who before he saw me was engaged in conversation with a beggar man that had asked an alms of him. I could hear my friend chide him for not finding out some work; but at the sametime saw him put his hand in his pocket and give him six pence.

Our salutations were very hearty on both sides, consisting of many kind shakes of the hand, and several affectionate looks which we cast upon one another. After which the Knight told me my good friend his chaplain was very well, and much at my service, and that the *Sunday* before he had made a most incomparable sermon out of Dr. *Barrow*. I have left, says he, all my affairs in his hands, and being willing to lay an obligation upon him, have deposited with him thirty marks, to be distributed among his poor Parishioners.

He than proceeded to acquaint me with the welfare of *Will Wimble*. Upon which he put his hand into his fob and presented me in his name with a tobacco stopper, telling me that *Will* had been busy all the beginning of the winter in turning great quantities of them; and that he made a present of one to every gentleman in the country who has good principles, and smokes. He added, that poor *Will* was at present under great tribulation, for that *Tom Touchy* had taken the law of him for cutting some hazel sticks out of one of his hedges.

Among other pieces of news which the Knight brought from his country seats, he informed me that *Moll White* was dead: and that about a month after her death the wind was so very high, that it blew down the end of one of his barns. But for my own part, says Sir ROGER, I do not think that the old woman had any hand in it.

He afterwards fell into an account of the diversions which had passed in his house during the holidays; for Sir ROGER, after the laudable custom of his ancestors, always keeps open house at Christmas. I learned from him that he had killed eight fat hogs for the season, that he had dealt about his chines very liberally amongst his neighbours, and that in particular he had sent a string of hogs puddings with a pack of cards to every poor family in the Parish. I have often thought, says Sir ROGER, it happens very well that Christmas should fall out in the middle of the winter. It is the most dead uncomfortable time of the year, when the poor people would suffer very much from their poverty and cold, if they had not good cheer, warm fires, and Christmas gambols to support them. I love to rejoice their poor hearts at this season, and to see the whole village merry in my great hall. I allow a double quantity of malt to my small beer, and setitarunning for twelve days to every one that calls for it. I have always a piece of cold beer and a mince pye upon the table, and am wonderfully pleased to see my tenants pass away a whole evening in playing their innocent tricks, and smutting one another. Our friend ***Will Wimble*** is as merry as any of them, and shows a thousand roguish tricks upon these occasions.

I was very much delighted with the reflection of my old friend, which carried so much goodness in it. He then launched cut into the praise of the late act of parliament for securing the church of England, and told me, with great satisfaction, that he believed it already began to take effect, for that a rigid dissenter, who chanced to dine at his house on Christmas day, had been observed to eat very plentifully of his plumb porridge.

After having dispatched all our country matters, Sir ROGER made several inquiries concerning the club, and particularly of his old antagonist Sir ANDREW FREEPORT. He asked me with a kind of smile, whether Sir ANDREW had not taken advantage of his absence, to vent among them some of his republican doctrines; but soon after gathering up his countenance into a more than ordinary seriousness, tell me truly, says he, don't you think Sir ANDREW had a hand in the pope's procession.........but without giving me time to answer him, well, says he, I know you are a wary man, and do not care to talk of public matters.

The Knight then asked me, if I had seen Prince Eugenio, and make me promise to get him a stand in some convenient place where he might have a full sight of that extraordinary man, whose presence does so much honour to the British nation. He dwelt very long on the praises of this great general, and I found that, since I was with him in the country, he had drawn many just observations together out of his reading in Baker's Chronicle, and other authors, who always lie in his hall window, which very much redound to the honour of this prince.

Having passed away the greatest part of the morning in hearing the Knight's reflections, which were partly private, and partly political, he asked me if I would smoke a pipe with him over a dish of coffee at Squire's. As I love the old man, I take delight in complying with everything that is agreeable to him, and accordingly waited on him to the coffee house, where his venerable figure drew upon us the eyes of the whole room. He had no sooner seated himself at the upper end of the high table, but he called for a clean pipe, a paper of tobacco, a dish of coffee, a wax candle, and the Supplement with such an air of cheerfulness and good humour, that all the boys in the coffee room (who seemed to take pleasure in serving him) were at once employed on his several errands, insomuch that nobody else could come at a dish of tea, till the Knight had got all his conveniencies about him.

XXXI.

My friend Sir Roger de Coverley told me t'other night, that he had been reading my paper upon ***Westminster Abbey***, in which, says he, there are a great many ingenious fancies. He told me at the sametime, that he observed I had promised another paper upon the tombs, and that he should be glad to go and see them with me, not having visited them since he had read hirtory. I could not at first imagine how this came into the Knight's head, till I recollected that he had been very busy all last summer upon Baker's Chronicle, which he has quoted several times in his disputes with Sir ANDREW FREEPORT since his last coming to town. Accordingly I promised to call upon him the next morning, that we might go together to the ***Abbey***.

I found the Knight under his butler's hands, who always shaves him. He was so sooner dressed, than he called for a glass of the widow ***Trueby's*** water, which he told me he always drank before he went abroad. He recommended me to a dram of it at the sametime, with so much heartiness, that I could not forbear drinking it. As soon as I had got it down, I found it very unpalatable; upon which the Knight observing that I had made several wry faces, told me that he knew I should not like it at first, but that it was the best thing in the world against the stone or gravel.

I could have wished indeed that he had acquainted me with the virtues of it sooner; but it was too late to complain, and I knew what he had done was out of good will. Sir ROGER told me further, that he looked upon it to be very good for a man whilst he staid in town, to keep off infection, and that he got together a quantity of it upon the first news of the sickness being at Dantzick: When of a sudden turning short to one of his servants, who stood behind him, he bid him call a hackney coach, and take care it was an elderly man that drove it.

He then resumed his discourse upon Mrs. ***Trueby's*** water, telling me that the widow ***Trueby*** was one who did more good than all the doctors and apothecaries in the county: That she distilled every poppy that grew within five miles of her; that she distributed her water gratis among all sorts of people; to which the Knight added, that she had a very great jointure, and that the whole country would fain have it a match between him and her; and truly, says Sir ROGER, if I had not been engaged, perhaps I could not have done better.

His discourse was broken off by his man's telling him he had called a coach. Upon our going to it, after having cast his eye upon the wheels, he asked the coachman if his axletree was good; upon the fellow's telling him he would warrant it, the Knight turned to me, told me he looked like an honest man, and went in without further ceremony.

We had not gone far, when Sir ROGER popping out his head, called the coachman down from his box, and upon his presenting himself at the window, asked him if he smoked; as I was considering what this would end in, he bid him stop by the way at any good tobacconist's, and take in a roll of their best virginia. Nothing material happen'd in the remaining part of our journey, till we were set down at the west end of the Abbey.

As we went up the body of the church, the Knight pointed at the trophies upon one of the new monuments, and cry'd out, a brave man, I warrant him! Passing afterwards by Sir CLOUDSLY SHOVEL, he flung his hand that way, and cry'd Sir CLOUDSLY SHOVEL! A very gallant man! As we stood before Busby's tomb, the Knight utter'd himself again after the same manner, Dr. BUSBY, a great man! He whipp'd my grandfather; a very great man! I should have gone to him myself, if I had not been a blockhead; a very great man!

We were immediately conducted into the little chapel on the right hand. Sir ROGER planting himself at our historian's elbow, was very attentive to everything he said particularly to the account he gave us of the lord who had cut off the King of Morocco's head. Among several other figures, he was very well pleased to see the statesman *Cecil* upon his knees; and, concluding them all to be great men, was conducted to the figure which represents that martyr to good housewifery, who died by the prick of a needle. Upon our interpreter's telling us, that she was a maid of honour to Queen ELIZABETH, the Knight was very inquisitive into her name and family; and after having regarded her finger for sometime, 'I wonder', says he, 'that Sir RICHARD BAKER has said nothing of her in his Chronicle'.

We were then conveyed to the two coronation chairs, where my old friend, after having heard that the stone underneath the most ancient of them, which was brought from Scotland, was called Jacob's Pillar, sat himself down in the chair; and looking like the figure of an old Gothick King, asked our interpreter, what authority they had to say, that Jacob had ever been in Scotland? The fellow, instead of returning him an answer, told him, that he hoped his honour would pay his forfeit. I could observe Sir ROGER a little ruffled upon being thus trepanned; but our guide not insisting upon his demand, the Knight soon recovered his good humour, and whispered in my ear, that if WILL. WIMBLE were with us, and saw those two chairs, it would go hard but he would get a tobacco stopper out of one or the other of them.

Sir ROGER, in the next place, laid his hand upon EDWARD the Third's sword, and leaning upon the pommel of it, gave us the whole history of the BLACK PRINCE; concluding, that in Sir RICHARD BAKER'S opinion, EDWARD the Third was one of the greatest princes that ever sate upon the English throne.

We were then shewn EDWARD the Confessor's tomb; upon which Sir ROGER acquainted us, that he was the first who touched for the evil; and afterwards HENRY the Fourth's, upon which he shook his head, and told us their was fine reading in the casualties in that reign.

Our conductor then pointed to that monument where there is the figure of one of our ***English*** kings without an head; and upon giving us to know, that the head, which was of beaten silver, had been stolen away several years since: Some Whig, 'I'll warrant you', says Sir ROGER; 'you ought to lock up your kings better; they will carry off the body too, if you don't take care.'

The glorious name of HENRY the Fifth and Queen ELIZABETH gave the Knight great opportunities of shining, and of doing justice to Sir RICHARD BAKER, who, as our Knight observed with some surprise, had a great many kings in him, whose monuments he had not seen in the Abbey.

For my own part, I could not but be pleased to see the Knight shew such an honest passion for the glory of his country, and such a respectful gratitude to the memory of its princes.

I must not omit, that the benevolence of my good old friend, which flows out towards every one he converses with, made him very kind to our interpreter, whom he looked upon as an extraordinary man; for which reason he shook him by the hand at parting, telling him, that he should be very glad to see him at his lodgings in 'Norfolk Buildings', and talk over these matters with him more at leisure.

XXXII.

When I was last with my friend Sir ROGER in ***Westminster*** Abby, I observed that he stood longer than ordinary before the bust of a venerable old man. I was at a loss to guess the reason of it, when after sometime he pointed to the figure, and asked me if I did not think that our forefathers looked much wiser in their beards than we do without them? 'for my part', says he, 'when I am walking in my gallery in the country, and see my ancestors, who many of them died before they were of my age, I cannot forbear regarding them as so many old patriarchs, and at the same-time looking upon myself as an idle smock faced young fellow. I love to see your Abrahams, your Isaacs, and your Jacobs, as we have them in old pieces of tapestry, with beards below their girdles, that cover half the hangings'. The Knight added, 'if I would recommend beards in one of my papers, and endeavour to restore human faces to their ancient dignity, that upon a month's warning he would undertake to lead up the fashion himself in a pair of whiskers.'

I smiled at my friend's fancy; but after we parted, could not forbear reflecting on the metamorphoses our faces have undergone in this particular.

The beard, conformable to the notion of my friend Sir ROGER, was for many ages looked upon as the type of wisdom. Lucian more than once rallies the philosophers of his time, who endeavoured to rival one another in beard; and represents a learned man who stood for a professorship in philosophy, as unqualified for it by the shortness of his beard.

Aelian, in his account of Zoilus, the pretended critic, who wrote against Homer and Plato, and thought himself wiser than all who had gone before him, tells us that this Zoilus had a very long beard that hung down upon his breast, but no hair upon his head, which he always kept close shaved, regarding, it seems, the hairs of his head as so many suckers, which if they had been suffered to grow, might have drawn away the nourishment from his chin, and by that means have starved his beard.

I have read somewhere that one of the popes refused to accept an edition of a saint's works, which were presented to him, because the saint in his effigies before the book, was drawn without a beard.

We see by these instances what homage the world has formerly paid to beards; and that a barber was not then allow'd to make those depredations on the faces of the learned, which have been permitted him of later years.

Accordingly several wise nations have been so extremely jealous of the least ruffle offered to their beard, that they seem to have fixed the point of honour principally in that part. The Spaniards were wonderfully tender in this particular. Don Quevedo, in his third vision on the last judgment, has carry'd the humour very far, when he tells us that one of his vain glorious country men, after having receiv'd sentence, was taken into custody by a couple of evil spirits; but that his guides happening to disorder his mustachoes, they were forced to recompose them with a pair of curling irons before they could get him to file off.

If we look into the history of our own nation, we shall find that the beard flourished in the Saxon Heptarchy, but was very much discouraged under the Norman line. It shot out, however, from time to time, in several reigns under different shapes. The last effort it made seems to have been in Queen Mary's Days, as the curious reader may find, if he pleases to peruse the figures of cardinal Poole, and Bishop Gardiner; tho' at the same time, I think it may be question'd, if zeal against popery has not induced our protestant painters to extend the beards of these two persecutors beyond their natural dimensions, in order to make them appear the more terrible.

I find but few beards worth taking notice of in the reign of King James the first.

During the civil wars there appeared one, which makes too great a figure in story to be passed over in silence; I mean that of the redoubted Hudibras, an account of which Butler has transmitted to posterity in the following lines:

His tawny beard was th' equal grace
Both of his wisdom, and his face;
In cut and dye so like a tyle,
A sudden view it would beguile:
The upper part thereof was whey,
The nether orange mixt with grey.

The whisker continued for sometime among us after the the expiration of beards; but this is a subject which I shall not here enter upon, having discussed it at large in a distinct treatise, which I keep by me in manuscript, upon the mustachoe.

If my friend Sir ROGER'S project, of introducing beards, should take effect, I fear the luxury of the present age would make it a very expensive fashion. There is no question but the beaux would soon provide themselves with false ones of the lightest colours, and the most immoderate lengths. A fair beard, of the tapestry size Sir ROGER seems to approve, could not come under twenty guineas. The famous golden beard of Aesculapius would hardly be more valuable than one made in the extravagance of the fashion.

Besides, we are not certain that the ladies would not come into the mode, when they take the air on horse back.

They already appear in hats and feathers, coats and perriwigs; and I see no reason why we not suppose that they would have their riding beards on the same occasion.

I may give the moral of this discourse in another paper.

XXXIII.

My friend Sir ROGER DE COVERLEY, when we last met together at the club, told me, that he had a great mind to see the new tragedy with me, assuring me at the same time, that he had not been at a play these twenty years. The last I saw, said Sir ROGER, was the Committee, which I should not have gone to neither, had not I been told before hand that it was a good church-of-England comedy. He then proceeded to enquire of me who this Distrest Mother was; and upon hearing that she was Hector's widow, he told me that her husband was a brave man, and that when he was a school-boy he had read his life at the end of the dictionary. My friend asked me, in the next place, if there would not be some danger in coming home late, in case the Mohocks should be abroad. 'I assure you', says he, 'I thought I had fallen into their hands last night; for I observed two or three lusty black men that followed me half way up Fleet-Street, and mended their pace behind me, in proportion as I put on to get away from them. You must know, continued the Knight with a smile, I fancied they had a mind to ***hunt*** me; for I remember an honest gentleman in my neighbourhood, who was served such a trick in King Charles the Second's time; for which reason he has not ventured himself in town ever since. I might have shewn them very good sport, had this been their design; for as I am an old-fox hunter, I should have turned and dogged, and have played them a thousand tricks they had never seen in their lives before'. Sir ROGER added, that if these gentlemen had any such intention, they did not succeed very well in it: 'For I threw them out', says he, 'at the end of Norfolk Street, where I doubled the corner, and got shelter in my lodgings before they could imagine what was become of me. However', says the Knight, 'if Captain SENTRY will make one with us to-morrow night, and if you will both of you call upon me about four o'clock, that we may be at the house before it is full, I will have my own coach in readiness to attend you, for John tells me he has got the fore-wheels mended.

The Captain, who did not fail to meet me there at the appointed hour, bid Sir ROGER fear nothing, for that he had put on the same sword which he made use of at the battle of Steenkirk. Sir ROGER'S servants, and among the rest my old friend the Butler, had, I found, provided themselves with good oaken plants, to attend their master upon this occasion. When he had placed him in his coach, with myself at his left hand, the captain before him, and his butler at the head of his footmen in the rear, we conveyed him in safety to the play-house, where, after having marched up the entry in good order, the captain and I went in with him, and seated him betwixt us in the pit. As soon as the house was full, and the candles lighted, my old friend stood up and looked about him with that pleasure, which a mind seasoned with humanity naturally feels in its self, at the sight of a multitude of people who seem pleased with one another, and partake of the same common entertainment. I could not but fancy to myself, as the old man stood up in the middle of the pit, that he made a very proper center to a tragick audience. Upon the entering of Pyrrhus, the Knight told me, that he did not believe the King of France himself had a better strut. I was indeed very attentive to my old friend's remarks, because I looked upom them as a piece of natural criticism, and was well pleased to hear him at the conclusion of almost every scene, telling me that he could not imagine how the play would end. Once while he appeared much concerned for ***Andromache***; and a little while after as much for ***Hermione***: And was extremely puzzled to think what would become of Pyrrhus.

When Sir ROGER saw Andromache's obstinate refusal to her lover's importunities, he whisper'd me in the ear, that he was sure she would never have him; to which he added, with a more than ordinary vehemence, 'you can't imagine, Sir, what 'tis to have to do with a widow. Upon Pyrrhus his threatning afterwards to leave her, the Knight shook his head, and muttered to himself, ay, do if you can'. This part dwelt so much upon my friend's imagination, that at the close of the third act, as I was thinking of something else, he whispered in my ear, 'these widows, Sir, are the most perverse creatures in the world. But pray, says he, you that are a critic, is this play according to your dramatic rules, as you call them? Should your people in tragedy always talk to be understood? Why, there is not a single sentence in this play that I do not know the meaning of.

The fourth act very luckily begun before I had time to give the old gentleman an answer: 'Well, says the Knight, sitting down with great satisfaction, I suppose we are now to see ***Hector's Ghost***. He then renewed his attention, and from time to time, fell a praising the widow. He made, indeed, a little mistake as to one of her pages, whom at his first entering, he took for ***Astyanax***; but he quickly set himself right in that particular, though, at the sametime, he owned he should have been very glad to have seen the little boy, who, says he, must needs be a very fine child by the account that is given of him. Upon Hermione's going off with a menace to Pyrrhus, the audience gave a loud clap; to which Sir ROGER added, on my word, a notable young baggage!

As there was a very remarkable silence and stillness in the audience during the whole action, it was natural for them to take the opportunity of the intervals between the acts, to express their opinion of the players, and of their respective parts. Sir Roger hearing a cluster of them praise Orestes, struck in with them, and told them, that he thought his friend Pylades was a very sensible man; as they were afterwards applauding Pyrrhus, Sir Roger put in a second time: 'And let me tell you, says he, though he speaks but little, I like the old fellow in whiskers as well as any of them'. Captain Sentry seeing two or three wags who sat near us, lean with an attentive ear towards Sir Roger, and fearing lest they should smoke the Knight, pluck'd him by the elbow, and whisper'd something in his ear, that lasted till the opening of the fifth act. The Knight was wonderfully attentive to the account which Orestes gives of Pyrrhus his death, and at the conclusion of it, told me it was such a bloody piece of work, that he was glad it was not done upon the stage. Seeing afterwards Orestes in his raving fit, he grew more than ordinary serious, and took occasion to moralize (in his way) upon an evil conscience, adding, that Orestes, in his madness, looked as if he saw something.

As we were the first that came into the house, so we were the last that went out of it; being resolved to have a clear passage for our old friend, whom we did not care to venture among the justling of the crowd. Sir Roger went out fully satisfied with his entertainment, and we guarded him to his lodgings in the same manner that we brought him to the play house; being highly pleased, for my own part, not only with the performance of the excellent piece which had been presented, but with the satisfaction which it had given to the good old man.

XXXIV.

As we were at the club last night, I observ'd that my friend Sir Roger, contrary to his usual custom, sat very silent, and instead of minding what was said by the company, was whistling to himself in a very thoughtful mood, and playing with a cork. I jogg'd Sir Andrew Freeport who sat between us; and as we were both observing him, we saw the Knight shake his head, and heard him say to himself, 'a foolish woman! I can't believe it'. Sir Andrew gave him a gentle pat upon the shoulder, and offered to lay him a bottle of wine that he was thinking of the widow. My old friend started, and recovering out of his brown study, told Sir Andrew that once in his life he had been in the right. In short, after some little hesitation, Sir Roger told us in the fulness of his heart that he had just received a letter from his steward, which acquainted him that his old rival and antagonist in the county, Sir David Dundrum, had been making a visit to the widow. However, says Sir Roger, I can never think that she'll have a man that's half a year older than I am, and a noted republican into the bargain.

Will. Honeycomb, who looks upon love as his particular province, interrupting our friend with a jaunty laugh; 'I thought, Knight', says he, 'thou hadst lived long enough in the world, not to pin thy happiness upon one that is a woman and a widow. I think that without vanity I may pretend to know as much of the female world as any man in Great Britain, tho' the chief of my knowledge consists in this, that they are not to be known'. WILL. immediately, with his usual fluency, rambled into an account of his own amours. 'I am now', says he, 'upon the verge of fifty', (tho' by the way we all knew he was turned of threescore). 'You may easily guess', continued WILL., 'that I have not lived so long in the world without having had some thoughts of settling in it, as the phrase is. To tell you truly, I have several times tried my fortune that way, though I can't much boast of my success.

'I made my first addresses to a young lady in the country; but when I thought things were pretty well drawing to a conclusion, her father happening to hear that I had formerly boarded with a Surgeon, the old Put forbid me his house, and within a fortnight after married his daughter to a fox-hunter in the neighbourhood.

'I made my next application to a widow, and attacked her so briskly, that I thought myself within a fortnight of her. As I waited upon her one morning, she told me that she intended to keep her ready-money and jointure in her own hand, and desired me to call upon her attorney in Lyons-inn, who would adjust with me what it was proper for me to add to it. I was so rebuffed by this overture, that I never enquired either for her or her attorney afterwards.

'A few months after I addressed myself to a young lady, who was an only daughter, and of a good family. I danced with her at several balls, squeezed her by the hand, said soft things to her, and, in short, made no doubt of her heart; and though my fortune was not equal to hers, I was in hopes that her fond father would not deny her the man she had fixed her affections upon. But as I went one day to the house in order to break the matter to him, I found the whole family in confusion, and heard to my unspeakable surprise, that Miss Jenny was that very morning run away with the Butler.

'I then courted a second widow, and am at a loss to this day how I came to miss her, for she had often commended my person and behaviour. Her maid indeed told me one day, that her mistress had said she never saw a gentleman with such a spindle pair of legs as Mr. Honeycomb.

'After this I laid siege to four heiresses successively, and being a handsome young dog in those days, quickly made a breach in their hearts; but I don't know how it came to pass, tho' I seldom failed of getting the daughter's consent, I could never in my life get the old people on my side.

'I could give you an account of a thousand other unsuccessful attempts, particularly of one which I made some years since upon an old woman, whom I had certainly borne away with flying colours, if her relations had not come pouring in to her assistance from all parts of England; nay, I believe I should have got her at last, had not she been carried off by an hard frost'.

As WILL'S. transitions are extremely quick, he turned from Sir Roger, and applying himself to me, told me there was a passage in the book I had considered last Saturday, which deserved to be writ in letters of gold; and taking out a pocket Milton read the following lines, which are part of one of Adam's speeches to Eve after the fall.

——O! why did God
Creator wise! that peopled highest heav'n
With spirits masculine, create at last

This novelty on earth, this fair defect
Of nature? and not fill the world at once
With men, as angels, without feminine?
Or find some other way to generate
Mankind? this mischief had not then befallen,
And more that shall befall; innumerable
Disturbances on earth through female snares,
And strait conjunction with this sex: for either
He never shall find out fit mate, but such
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;
Or, whom he wishes most, shall seldom gain
Through her perverseness; but shall see her gain'd
By a far worse; or if she love, withheld
By parents; or his happiest choice too late
Shall meet already linked, and wedlock bound
To a fell adversary, his hate or shame;
Which infinite calamity shall cause
To human life, and household peace confound.

Sir ROGER listened to this passage with great attention, and desiring Mr. Honeycomb to fold down a leaf at the place, and lend him his book, the Knight put it up in his pocket, and told us that he would read over those verses again before he went to bed.

XXXV.

As I was sitting in my chamber, and thinking on a subject for my next Spectator, I heard two or three irregular bounces at my Landlady's door, and upon the opening of it, a loud cheerful voice enquiring whether the philosopher was at home. The child who went to the door answered very innocently, that he did not lodge there. I immediately recollected that it was my good friend Sir Roger's voice; and that I had promised to go with him on the water to Spring Garden, in case it proved a good evening. The Knight put me in mind of my promise from the bottom of the stair case, but told me that if I was speculating he would stay below till I had done. Upon my coming down, I found all the children of the family got about my old friend, and my Landlady herself, who is a notable prating gossip, engaged in a conference with him: being mightily pleased with his stroking her little boy upon the head, and bidding him be a good child and mind his book.

We were no sooner come to the Temple Stairs, but we were surrounded with a crowd of watermen, offering us their respective services. Sir Roger, after having looked about him very attentively, spied one with a wooden leg, and immediately gave him orders to get his boat ready. As we were walking towards it, 'you must know', says Sir Roger, 'I never make use of any body to row me, that has not either lost a leg or an arm. I would rather bate him a few strokes of his oar, than not employ an honest man that has been wounded in the queen's service. If I was a lord or a Bishop, and kept a barge, I would not put a fellow in my livery that had not a wooden-leg'.

My old friend, after having seated himself, and trimmed the boat with his coachman, who, being a very sober man, always serves for ballast on these occasions, we made the best of our way for Fox-Hall. Sir Roger obliged the waterman to give us the history of his right leg, and hearing that he had left it (at *La Hogue*), with many particulars which passed in that glorious action, the Knight in the triumph of his heart made several reflections on the greatness of the British nation; as, that one Englishman could beat three

Frenchmen; that we could never be in danger of popery so long as we took care of our fleet; that the Thames was the noblest river in Europe; that London Bridge was a greater piece of work, than any of the seven wonders of the world; with many other honest prejudices which naturally cleave to the heart of a true Englishman.

After some short pause, the old Knight turning about his head twice or thrice, to take a survey of this great metropolis, bid me observe how thick the city was set with churches, and that there was scarce a single steeple on this side Temple-bar. 'A most heathenish sight! says Sir Roger: there is no religion at this end of the town. The fifty new churches will very much mend the prospect; but church-work is slow, church-work is slow!

I do not remember I have any where mentioned, in Sir Roger's character, his custom of saluting every body that passes by him with a good-morrow or a good-night. This the old man does out of the overflowings of his humanity, though at the sametime it renders him so popular among all his country neighbours, that it is thought to have gone a good way in making him once or twice Knight of the Shire. He cannot forbear this exercise of benevolence even in town, when he meets with anyone in his morning or evening walk. It broke from him to several boats that passed by us upon the water; but to the Knight's great surprise, as he gave the good-night to two or three young fellows a little before our landing, one of them, instead of returning the civility, asked us what queer old put we had in the boat, and whether he was not ashamed to go a wenching at his years? with a great deal of the like Thames Ribaldry. Sir Roger seemed a little shocked at first, but at length assuming a face of magistracy, told us, that if he were a Middlesex justice, he would make such vagrants know that her Majesty's subjects were no more to be abused by water than by land.

We were now arrived at Spring Garden, which is exquisitely pleasant at this time of year. When I considered the fragrancy of the walks and bowers, with the choirs of birds that sung upon the trees, and the loose tribe of people that walked under their shades, I could not but look upon the place as a kind of Mahometan Paradise. Sir Roger told me it put him in mind of a little coppice by his house in the country, which his chaplain used to call an aviary of nightingales. 'You must understand', says the Knight, 'there is nothing in the world that pleases a man in love so much as your nightingale. Ah, Mr. SPECTATOR! the many moonlight nights that I have walked by myself, and thought on the widow by the music of the nightingales'! He here fetched a deep sigh, and was falling into a fit of musing, when a masque, who came behind him, gave him a gentle tap upon the shoulder, and asked him if he would drink a bottle of mead with her? but the Knight, being startled at so unexpected a familiarity, and displeased to be interrupted in his thoughts of the widow, told her, she was a wanton baggage, and bid her go about her business.

We concluded our walk with a glass of Burtonale, and a slice of hung-beef. When we had done eating ourselves, the Knight called a waiter to him, and bid him carry the remainder to the waterman that had but one leg. I perceived the fellow stared upon him at the oddness of the message, and was going to be saucy; upon which I ratified the Knight's commands with a peremptory look.

As we were going out of the garden, my old friend, thinking himself obliged, as a member of the quorum, to animadvert upon the morals of the place, told the mistress of the house, who sat at the bar, that he should be a better customer to her garden, if there were more nightingales, and fewer strumpets.

XXXVI.

When I consider this great city in its several quarters and divisions, I look upon it as an aggregate of various nations distinguished from each other by their respective customs, manners and interests. The courts of two countries do not so much differ from one another, as the court and city in their peculiar ways of life and conversation. In short, the inhabitants of St. JAMES'S, notwithstanding they live under the same laws, and speak the same language, are a distinct people from those of Cheapside, who are likewise removed from those of the *Temple* on the one side, and those of *Smithfield* on the other, by several climates and degrees in their way of thinking and conversing together.

For this reason, when any public affair is upon the anvil, I love to hear the reflections that arise upon it in the several districts and parishes of *London* and *Westminster*, and to ramble up and down a whole day together, in order to make myself acquainted with the opinions of my ingenious counntrymen. By this means I know the faces of all the principal politicians within the bills of morality; and as every Coffee House has some particular statesman belonging to it, who is the mouth of the street where he lives, I always take care to place myself near him, in order to know his judgment on the present posture of affairs. The last progress that I made with this intention, was about three months ago, when we had a current report of the King of *France's* death. As I foresaw this would produce a new face of things in *Europe*, and many curious speculations in the *British* Coffee Houses, I was very desirous to learn the thoughts of our most eminent politicians on that occasion.

That I might begin as near the fountain-head as possible, I first of all called in at St. JAMES'S, where I found the whole outward room in a buzz of politics. The speculations were but very indifferent towards the door, but grew finer as you advanced to the upper end of the room, and were so very much improved by a knot of theorists, who sat in the inner room, within the steams of the coffee-pot, that I there heard the whole *Spanish* monarchy disposed of, and all the line of BOURBON provided for in less than a quarter of an hour.

I afterwards called in at GILES'S, where I saw a board of French gentlemen sitting upon the life and death of their Grand Monarque. Those among them who had espoused the Whig interest, very positively affimed, that he departed this life about a week since, and therefore proceeded without any further delay to the release of their friends in the gallies, and to their own re-establishment; but finding they could not agree among themselves, I proceeded on my intended progress.

Upon my arrival at Jenny Man's, I saw an *Alerte* young fellow that cocked his hat upon a friend of his who entered just at the sametime with myself, and accosted him after the following manner. Well, Jack, the old prig is dead at last. Sharp's the word. Nor or never, boy. Up to the walls of Paris directly. With several other deep reflections of the same nature.

I met with very little variation in the politics between Charing cross and Covent Garden. And upon my going into WILL'S I found their discourse was gone off from the death of the French King to that of monsieur BOILEAU, RACINE, CORNEILE, and several other poets, whom they regretted on this occasion, as persons who would have obliged the world with very noble elegies on the death of so great a prince, and so eminent a patron of learning.

At a coffee house near the ***Temple,*** I found a couple of young gentlemen engaged very smartly in a dispute on the succession to the ***Spanish*** Monarchy. One of them seemed to have been retained as advocate for the Duke of ***Anjou,*** the other for his imperial majesty. They were both for regulating the title to that kingdom by the statute laws of ***England*** ; but finding them going out of my depth, I passed forward to St. PAUL'S church-yard, where I listened with great attention to a learned man, who gave the company an account of the deplorable state of France during the minority of the Deceased King.

I then turned on my right hand into Fish-Street, where the chief politician of that quarter, upon hearing the news, (after having taken a pipe of tobacco, and ruminated for some time) " if ", says he, " the King of France is certainly dead, we shall have plenty of mackerel this season ; our fishery will not be disturbed by privateers, as it has been for these ten years past". He afterwards considered how the death of this great man would affect our pilchards, and by several other remarks infused a general joy into his whole audience.

I afterwards entered a by-coffee-house that stood at the upper end of a narrow lane, where I met with a nonjuror, did our lives. I am afraid he caught his death the last county sessions, where he would go to see justice done to a poor widow woman, and her fatherless children, that had been wronged by a neighbouring gentleman; for you know, Sir, my good master was always the poor man's friend. Upon his coming home, the first complaint he made was, that he had lost his Roast-Beef stomach, not being able to touch a sirlion, which was served up according to custom; and you know he used to take great delight in it. From that time forward he grew worse and worse, but still kept a good heart to the last. Indeed we were once in great hope of his recovery, upon a kind message that was sent him from the widow lady whom he had made love to the forty last years of his life; but this only proved a lightning before death. He has bequeathed to this lady, as a token of his love, a great pearl necklace, and a couple of silver bracelets set with jewels, which belonged to my good old lady his mother: He has bequeathed the fine white gelding, that he used to ride a-hunting upon, to his chaplain, because he thought he would be kind to him, and has left you all his books. He has, moreover, bequeathed to the chaplain a very pretty tenement with good lands about it. It being a very cold day when he made his will, he left for mourning, to every man in the parish, a great freze-coat, and to every woman a black ridinghood. It was a most moving sight to see him take leave of his poor servants, commending us all for our fidelity, whilst we were not able to speak a word for weeping. As we most of us are grown grey-headed in our dear master's service, he has left us pensions and legacies, which we may live very comfortably upon, the remaining part of our days. He has bequeathed a great deal more in charity, which is not yet come to my knowledge, and it is peremptorily said in the parish, that he has left money to build a steeple to the church; for he was heard to say sometime ago, that if he lived two years longer, COVERLEY Church should have a steeple to it. The chaplain tells every body that he made a very good end, and never speaks of him without tears. He was buried according to his own directions, among the family of the COVERLEY'S, on the left hand of his father Sir ARTHUR. The coffin was carrid by six of his tenants, and the Pall held up by six of the quorum: The whole Parish followed the corpse with heavy hearts, and in their mourning suits, the men in freze, and the women in riding hoods. Captain SENTRY, my master's nephew, has taken possession of the hall-house, and the whole estate. When my old master saw him a little before his death, he shook him by the hand, and wished him joy of the estate which was falling to him, desiring him only to make good use of it, and to pay the several legacies, and the gifts of charity which he told him he had left as quit-rents upon the estate. The captain truly seems a courteous man, though he says but little. He makes much of those whom my master loved, and shews great kindness to the old house dog, that you know my poor master was so fond of. It would have gone to your heart to have heard the moans the dumb creature made on the day of my master's death. He has never joyed himself since; no more has any of us. 'Twas the melancholiest day for the poor people that ever happened in *Worcestershire.* This being all from,

Honoured sir,

'*Your most Sorrowful Servant,*

'EDWARD BISCUIT.'

P, S.—'My master desired, some weeks before he died, that a book which comes up to you by the carrier should be given to Sir *Andrew Freeport*, in his name.'

This letter, notwithstanding the poor Butler's manner of writing it, gave us such an idea of our good old friend, that upon the reading of it there was not a dry eye in the club. Sir *Andrew* opening the book, found it to be a collection of acts of parliament. There was in particular the Act of Uniformity, with some passages in it marked by Sir ROGER'S own hand. Sir *Andrew* found that they related to two or three points, which he had disputed with Sir ROGER the last time he appeared at the club. Sir *Andrew*, who would have been merry at such an incident on another occasion, at the sight of the old man's hand writing burst into tears, and put the book into his pocket. Captain *Sentry* informs me, that the Knight has left rings and mourning for every one in the club.

——: o :——

NOTES

ADDISON. No. 1.

I

One with a flash begins, and ends in smoke;
Another with smoke brings glorious light,
And (without raising expectation high)
Surprises us with dazzling miracles.

(Roscommon).

Page 1.

Humorously the author hints about the inquisitiveness of readers in general to know something of the personal traits of the authors, before they would take any interest in their works.

Choleric : angry. **Conduce** etc., as if these particulars lead to a correct understanding of the book. The reader is satirised here. **Natural**: peculiar ; **prefatory**: introductory; **digesting** : preparing. **William the Conqueror's time,** *i.e.*, from 1066 A.D., from good old days. **Whole and entire :** not a bit less ; **field and meadow** : lands to cultivate and graze. **Gone with child** : pregnant ; **brought to bed** : gave birth to. Here the author becomes very humorous, and describes how certain legal associations had worked into the brain of the people to entertain extravagant hopes of the future of the baby. **Depending :** in progress in the court of law. **Justice of the Peacc :** a position conferred on men of respectability to guard the peace of the land, corresponding to some degree the honorary Bench of Magistrates in India. **Presaged** : foretold ; **interpretation :** meaning.

Page 2.

Gravity : Seriousness ; **threw away my rattle**: would have nothing to do with children's playthings like rattle making a noise, toys, etc. **Coral** : a toy with silver bell attached to it to suck. **Nonage :** being not of age, *i.e.*, still a minor. **Sullen** ; reserved : **my parts** : my abilities, as in the expression he is a man of parts ; **were solid and would wear well :** were of a substantial nature and would last a length of time ; **profound silence** : deep silence, *i.e.*, the characteristic of the Spectator who is only for watching men and manners and not for indulging in talk. **The public exercises of the college :** discourses held on any suggested subject, the ability displayed counting towards the grant of a degree ; corresponding to the *viva voce* in certain examinations. **Learned body** : University ; **learned tongues** : classical languages, particularly Greek and Latin ; **unaccountable fellow :** whose ways could not be easily explained. **Insatiable thirst :** eagerness to acquire knowledge that could not be easily satisfied. **Antiquities of Egypt** : like the pyramids built 5000 years ago, justly famous. This is a sarcastic reference to the ways of travellers being pleased with such silly things as taking a measurement without minding other great features connected with them.

Page 3.

Addison here gives some particulars of his birth, life and studies ; it has hence an autobiographical interest.

The times of Addison were times of coffee clubs. There were clubs for different classes and tastes of people. Each club reflected one phase of national life and life of the city was mostly a life lived in these clubs. As the Spectator was anxious to know life in all its phases, he enters clubs of different kinds to know what each class of people did and spoke. **Will's** coffee club famous for its politicians in Russel Street, Covent garden, very dear to Dryden.' **Round** : circle of people, gathered. **Child's** : frequented by clergymen. **Postman :** a newspaper of the time. **St. James's,** because of its situation in St. James's Street : a club frequented by the Whig politicians. **The Grecian** in the Strand, where the barristers congregated; the **cocoa-tree**, the favourite resort of the Tories. **The Drury Lane and the Haymarket** : famous theatres, still in existence though built in the Stuart and Elizabethan times. **The exchange** is the Royal Exchange where the financial transaction of the nation took place, is as old as the times of Elizabeth. **Pass for a Jew, etc. :** Jonathan a name peculiar to the Jews. However hated they had the control of the finance of the country. These Jews interested in matters of finance frequented the club **Jonathan's** and reviewed financial matters there. **Stock-Jobbers :** dealing with stocks, *i.e.*, shares in companies etc. **In short, etc. :** this gives in brief the peculiar trait of the Spectator who was more for seeing than talking. As the Spectator never gives expression freely, he is taken by different people in different ways. **One of the species**. *i.e.*, doing what men in social groups would generally do. This explains how he was taken to be 'unaccountable'; **a speculative statesman** a hit against the theoretical Statesmen of the time; the adjective applies to the men of the other professions too; for in the clubs they but debated on topics relating to their profession. **Economy :** management of the household affairs. Note that the Spectator is but a bachelor. **Blots** : errors, c/f the proverb, the Spectator knows more of the game than the player, **espoused :** took up the cause of or wedded to ; **with violence** in a furious manner. Though Addison was a Whig in politics he was not blind to the virtues of the Tories. He was impartial in his estimate. In fact his favourite hero Sir Roger De Coverley is a Tory. **Neutrality:** without taking up this side or other. **Unless forced, etc. :** unless I see how one party was unreasonably opposed to the other. Spectator explains the significance of his name in plain English words as **looker-on. Not Unqualified :** fully qualified to be the author of these essays in which much worldly wisdom is contained, wisdom gleaned by a close study of the world in its manifold activities. **Seen, read** and **heard** are the three sources of all knowledge. **taciturnity :** reservedness. **print myself out** : publish in print all that is contained in me. **diversion or the improvement** : both to amuse and instruct ; make myself interesting and instructive. **Summoned out of it** : die. **embellishment** ; attractiveness. **Name and lodgings** would lead to the discovery of my identity : **age** would make readers to become indifferent, for young authors would not be listened to and old ones would be ignored. **Draw me out of the obscurity** : bring me to light ; **Salutes and civilities** : the sly humour of Addison who takes for granted that his essays would become very popular, and that naturally would make the readers respect the author. **Complexion,** though in Elizabethan English had a wide meaning, nature, external appearance, colour of the skin etc., here it is used in the restricted sense of colouring of the face.

Page 4.

Mr. Buckley's ; the publishers of the Spectator: **Little**

Britain, a street in London where publishing business was much conducted. **Weal** : welfare.

II

STEELE.] **[No. 2.**

" Six more at least join their consenting voice."

This essay is very important as it gives particulars of the six important members of the Spectator club.

Ancient descent: descended from a long line of ancestors of a distinguished family: **country dance**; a dance very popular in country parts, and has nothing to do with Contre danse which is a kind of quadrille. It is a dance in which the partners are arranged opposite to each other in lines. The tune of ' Roger a Calverley, in which Calverley by metathesis becomes Coverley, is the tune while dancing which is referred to here as coverley-dance. Note the character of Sir Roger de Coverley. Singular : peculiar; but peculiarities associated with robust common sense. **contradictions to.........world** : quite the opposite of what people generally do. **only.........wrong** : but Sir Roger thinks in his acts he is not at fault, but that the people do wrong to think so. **humour** : trait of character. **Sourness** : harshness of temper.

Page 6.

unconfined to modes and forms : not being a sticker to certain accepted ways of doing things. **Soho-Square ;-a** fashionable part of London once called the King's Square. Soho is compounded of the words of the cry of the hunting party So ! hoe ! **crossed in love** : disappointed in love. **perverse** : acting contrary to his wishes.

My Lord Rochester, etc : Persons of the higher aristocracy in the days of Charles II who were closely associated with fashionable Society. **Bully Dawson**, a blustering, quarrelsome fellow of the time. **for calling him youngster** : for taking him to be an inexperienced, irresponsible man. **grew careless of himself** : never paid much attention to his personal smartness of look as a man of Society. **doublet** : a garment worn inside another garment. Though fashion changed, yet he continued to be in dress what he was before. **in and out**, the same coming and going out of fashion a number of times. **A good house** ; house provided with all that is necessary for extending hospitality. **beloved and esteemed** : we love a man for his goodness of heart, and esteem him for his greatness of intellect or some distinguished feature. The first is decidedly greater than the second. **Young women** : there is some humour here : even though Sir Roger is not fashionable or highly accomplished, it is the nature of women to love a man, inspite of his age, if he be wealthy, and besides belong to a noble family. **A justice of the quorum** : a justice in a group of country justices who serve as honorary Magistrates and dispense law. **quarter session** : law courts held every quarter of the year, going on circuit to hear and dispose of law suits. **Game Act** : As Sir Roger is a Tory, he is a good fox hunter and knows all about the laws passed by parliament relating to games. **Inner Temple** : A law institution and there is another called the Middle Temple. These are so called as once the same buildings were occupied by the Templars, an order of fighting monks who made it their duty to preserve the Temple of Jerusalem from being encroached upon by the Saracens, who gave no end of trouble to the christian pilgrims.

Page 7.

Humoursome : freakish, fanciful. **in those of the stage** ; though he was asked to give his time to law studies, he gave his mind to matters relating to the drama. **Aristotle,** the great philosopher of the 4th century B.C. who wrote on dramatic criticism. **Longinus** : a great philosopher and writer of the 3rd century A.D. who wrote on poetical criticism. **Littleton or Coke** : Two eminent legal talents of the Elizabethan era. **Marriage articles** : provisions or clauses relating to the terms of the marriage. **leases and tenures** : how property must be held and conditions relating to land. **All which.........lump.** Not to make his father know how his tastes lie, he gets another lawyer do for him this legal work referred to by his father, and pay him a lump sum of money. **passions,** the moods of the several actors in a drama in playing their several parts. **debates,** instead of devoting time to the line of arguments pursued in controversies. **Demosthenes** : the greatest Greek orator of all times, of the 2nd century B. C. **Tully** or Marcus Tullius Cicero, the greatest Roman orator of the 1st century B. C. **As few.........conversation,** As this man of law is not concerned with the business of making money, his conversation becomes exceedingly agreeable to Society. **delicate**: one capable of making nicer distinctions, because of the vast range of his knowledge. **Time of the play.........hour** : When the acting comes on the stage, it is the occasion for him to show his critical abilities. **Rubbed** : dusted and polished. In England there are in street corners shoe blacks who do it.

Perriwig ! one **r** is extra here, means an artificial shock of hair occasionally powdered to keep it to natural colour ; worn as a fashion of the times as even now the judges of the supreme courts in England do The name. **Freeport** : is sufficiently indicative that he was a free-trader and desired to put no restrictions on trade.

Page 8.

British Common : Just as a common is a piece of land adjoining the village to which all the people in the village are entitled, he looks upon the sea as much the possession of the English as of others to trade. This is in reference to the monopoly of trade routes on the Sea possessed or claimed by some of the European nations like the Spaniards and others. **Extend dominions by arms** : for lands obtained by conquest leave ill memories and hamper good feeling and traders stand to lose. **If this part............another** : Suppose a country is good for producing wheat, we gain the good will of that nation by trading in it, and if another nation produces cotton, again we cultivate the friendship of that nation by taking their cotton ; thus trade with different people in different articles brings about international peace. **Diligence**: diligence in industry. **A general trader**: trader dealing in various articles of merchandise from different people. Such a man has a fund of information relating to far distant lands: the knowledge of a scholar being but book knowledge is not quite so good ; **unaffected eloquence** : free flow of talk **perspicuity** : clearness. **There is not a point.........owner** : from the different parts of the world to which the many divisions of the compass point, he has Ships arriving at English ports bringing him wealth. **Captain Sentry** : the name indicates a watchful Malitary man. **Invincible modesty** : Good soldiers are not men of words but of deeds. **He is one.........them** : Though he is possessed of excellent merits, they go unnoticed because he cannot beat his big drum. **He has quitted**: Addison humorously hints here of the soldier giving up his calling because of his hopes to succeed to the Knight's property; also in Queen Anne's days men were not rewarded according to their merit, but the favour they commanded at courts.

Page 9.

Conspicuous: prominent. **Impudence etc.**: Even for one's striking abilities, it is the man of vain talk and not the silent person who comes in for recognition. **Even regular behaviour etc.**: Course of conduct always straightforward and the same, and not adjusted to times and persons. Commanders recognise the merit of their officers only when they pushing behind deserving people, bring themselves to the notice of their superiors, *i.e.*, commanders themselves do not care to know by their own observation who are deserving of promotion and who are not. **desert**: according to what they deserve. **has as many.........him**: a humorous way of saying that commander must disappoint a number of undeserving people before he could reward the deserving man; **make a figure** or cut a figure is to become prominent. **assist his.........vindication**: A deserving man should help to educate his commander from being deceived by the loud appeals of worthless people, by speaking about his qualification for reward or promotion. **civil cowardice**: as contrasted with military fear, is cowardice caused by too much of modesty or politeness. **over-bearing**: proud so as to bear down or put down others. **obsequious**: servilely yielding to another with a view to obtain his favour. **Humourists**: Carried by their humour or one-sided development of nature. **Will Honeycomb**: William Honeycomb; as honey is sweet, this gentleman has in him very entertaining qualities, particularly pleasing to ladies. Hence the name.

Page 10.

Careful of his person etc : Though he is rather old, being free from anxiety to make a living, and leading a care free life, he appears much younger. **Habits** : dress, *i.e.*, how the art of dressing will add to one's smartness of look. **mode** : fashion. **French King's wives** : Even now the Parisian or French fashion in dress is taken to be the best in higher society ; it was more so during the Stuart period, *i.e.* 1630—1710. **Duke of Monmouth** : Illegitimate son of Charles II, a man of striking personal beauty. **Was taken with him** : her heart went out to him when he rode at the head of his regiment. **Important :** said sarcastically, as the occasions are of no importance. **Blow of a fan** : a Smart strike from a fan by a lady. Ladies of quality till about fifty yesrs ago never went out without fans and they handled them pretty effectively to draw other's notice. **The rogue cheated etc**. he got the better of me in the love affair, as the women threw me out and took him instead. **More sedate turn** : More serious nature : the humour here is though men of such a nature are not to be interested in such a talk, whatever their outside appearance might be, in the heart of their hearts they feel pleased with such light talk.

Page 11.

Where............man : He is not a man to be trusted in affairs relating to women, and except for this defect in his nature, he is a nice good fellow. **cannot accept.........to :** Though there are occasions when he could better his fortune by getting higher clerical offices, yet afraid of their greater work or higher responsibilities, he prefers to lead a quiet life. **Preferments** : promotions or advancements. **Chamber-counsellor** : an advocate who without practising at courts, takes fees and gives legal advice in his chamber. **Probity** and **integrity** : strict honesty. **advances** : brings into notice. **far gone in years** : well experienced by knowing him intimately. **fall on** : to deal with or to speak on. **As one.........infirmities** : as a man the least concerned with worldly affairs, but who to the degree he grows older and weaker, feels glad that he is coming to the end of his earthly existence, and soon will have the supreme joy of entering Heaven.

III

"So the boat's brawny crew the current stem
And, slow advancing, struggle with the stream ;
But if they slack their hands, or cease to strive,
Then down the flood with headlong haste they drive."

The members of the Spectator club are so well chosen to be representative of different interests, and a fair estimate of life could be had by noting what these several members say and do. Herein lies the key to the Spectator Papers, though Sir Roger-De-Coverley occupies a main share and gives us all the delight of a noble hero of an excellent novel :

Page 12.

Herd : used in contempt, because of their indifference to educative factors. **Since.........useful** : This sentence defines the scope of the **Spectator**. **I shall...........day** :

An important sentence, for it gives an idea of what Addison had in view. Too much of morality or too much of frivolity does little good; serious people if they become lively, or lively people become a bit serious, a golden mean is reached and in no small measure contributes to the advancement of the world. **Short, transient, intermitting**: of a brief duration, and even that done occasionally. **The mind etc.** Every day the mind must be quickened to noble impulses, else it becomes a ready receptacle to vicious things. **Philosophy from heaven**: made philosophical knowledge easily available to people of common intellect. **I have............ coffee-houses**: In the days of Addison, life was lived in extremes; and Addison wanted to elevate the atmosphere of coffee-houses and clubs by bringing men of study and character to mix freely with pleasure loving people, so that the latter would be the better for such association. **I would therefore**: Here Addison notes the educative and wholesome effect of the Spectator papers on the members of well regulated families. **as a part of tea equipage**: make the reading of the paper as necessary a part of their life as tea and other things are.

Mose's Serpent: a biblical reference in which the rod of Moses ate up the serpents which were let upon the Israelites to kill them, while returning from Egypt. **Prints**: papers.

Page 13.

Muscovy or Poland: In distant parts like Russia or Poland. **Wearing out**: considerably decreasing. **Inflame**: increase; **irreconcileable**: never to be made friends again.

fraternity of Spectators: brotherhood of idlers. **Contemplative tradesmen**: each adjective is a disqualification to the particular class of persons: **titular**: only in title, but not by practice: **fellows of the Royal Society**: satirical for their theoretical speculations. **Templars**: Lawyers: **out of business**: who have no party appointments. **who are the actors in it**: these people look upon real workers as being no good, themselves being idlers. **Commiseration**: pity; **needy**: in ideas of their own. **Dutch Mail**: overland mail carried through Holland: **at the mercy**: because so abjectly they are dependent on others. **Impertinent**: irrelevant, not used in the modern sense of being cheeky.

Page 14.

Ladies are the worse for idle talk. A thought provoking paper like the Spectator is expected to do them a lot of good. **Their amusement etc**: Their recreations are arranged on the presumption of their being extremely weak creatures in mind and body, being unfit for creatures gifted with reason. **The toilet etc**: A satirical reference to the enormous time spent by ladies on their dress etc., to beautify their person. **Serious**: which they regard as serious, but not actually so. **I know** etc: Addison is generous to admit of a better class of ladies, making men to admit their accomplishments. **finishing touches**: slight additions required to make one's qualification perfect.

Page 15.

Embellishment: even a defect such as softness becomes a qualification if found in ladies; **gentle readers**: ladies. **raillery**: matter of ridicule. **give over**: abandon or give up. **caveat**: caution, hint, or warning.

"Here Plenty's liberal horn shall pour
Of fruits for thee a copious Shower
Rich honours of the quiet plain."

To pass away: to spend. **Country-house**: as contrasted with town-house which gentlemen of means have. **Speculations:** Subject matter or thoughts for the paper. **Humour**: peculiar inclinations and tendencies. **Shows me at a distance**: so that my shyness. modesty, or avoiding notice of others might not be affected. **Stealing a sight ....hedge**: looking at me without themselves being seen, hiding behind a fence. The humour is in spite of their trouble, I can see what they do.

Page 16.

Staid: modest, and well balanced. Students should note the character of Sir Roger: his exemplary behaviour towards the servants, and the popularity and respect he has won from them.

Page 17.

Wonderfully: greatly. **Chaplain**: a domestic priest: In the estates of great landlords, it is customary to engage a parish priest, and this clergyman becomes the domestic clergyman. Here the Spectator gives an ideal clergyman. **old knight's esteem:** very much esteemed by the old knight. **Humourist**: a man acting up to some peculiar fancies. **Extravagance**: something out of the way. **particularly his:** not to be seen in others. **This cast of mind**: this harmless whimsicality. **Insulted with Latin or Greek**: that is his feelings being insulted in learnedly talking in Greek or Latin to show their learning. when it does no good to the man talked to. **Plain sense etc** : common sense more than learning. **good aspect** : of good presence to create an impression on the mind of the church going people. **a clear voice** : So that every word of his might be clearly heard, without the nasal twang of the clergy. **a sociable temper** : a sociable temper does much to elevate the moral and manners of the people of the parish. **back-gammon** : A game played by two persons upon a table or board made for the purpose with pieces, dice boxes and dice something corresponding to ಪಗಡೆ.

Page 18.

Annuity for life : a pension given every year till his death. **If he.........he is** : Though not now, because I have not made known my intentions, after my death, if he survives me, how much of regard I have for him. **my tenants, his parishioners** : The clergyman is such a selfless soul, he asks no favour for himself, but for others. **Law-suits** : for by arbitration and good advice he prevents people from rushing into the courts. **Acquiesce** : accept. **digested** : arranged ready for use. **Practical divinity** : for without puzzling his head to preach sermons of his own, he delivers those of great men who have left excellent sermons behind. The students would do well to note that in this seeming caprice of Sir Roger in his choice of a clergyman. he shows excellent practical sense, the result being an excellent man doing excellent work with more than excellent results. **The bishop of St. Asaph etc** : Though it was the clergyman who preached the sermons, yet he says the great divines whose sermons he preached were the actual preachers, the credit going to them and not to him. **Living authors** :

Living divines of the time who have made their sermons available by publication for others to take make full use of them.

Page 19.

Composition of a poet etc : The best poetry will lose its charm, if it is not recited with feeling. **I could heartily wish** : The Spectator in the person of Sir Roger gives practical advice how clergymen should be chosen, if religion should still have some influence on the mind of the congregation.

V

" The Athenians erected a large statue to Aesop, and placed him, though a slave. on a lasting pedestal : to show that the way to honour lies open, indifferently to all. Aesop was a slave, yet he wrote delightfully good short stories with excellent morals."

Indifferently : equally. The motto shows how even our servants must be well treated, at times as if they were equals. **manner of attendance** : how well I was looked to. **general corruption............masters**: If the servants become bad, it is the masters that should be blamed. Here practical advice is given how masters should give and take respect. **The aspect** : the look ; **that servants fly** : afraid of the punishment of the masters, or that the masters would not tolerate the sight of their servants. **Industriously** : take the trouble to. **visit** : is a term to be applied when two of equal position meet : here the master takes the servant quite as his equal. **humane** : kind and considerate. **with such economy.........beforehand** : So carefully that something is left on hand for the master not to feel worried about. **unapt to vent peevish expressions** : not ready or not feeling the necessity or the occasion to give expression to words of anger; for masters visit on their servants, their own disappointments, as Indian husbands do with their unoffending wives.

Page 20.

And a certain etc : The servants find cheer and regard it as a privilege in doing some service or other to the master. **rated** : taken to task; **stripped** : clothes taken away to be whipped on the bare body; **unbecoming** : not suited to the position of the master. **mean masters: worthy servants** : note the antithesis : masters and servants exchanging qualities not expected of them. **If the old man** : note the solicitude of the master to inquire of the welfare of the tenants. **preserves a respect** : more than maintains the dignity of his position far from being a mere master he is treated royally by the servants. **Cast clothes** : a nasty habit that continues everywhere even to-day; fancy a servant who can ill afford to put on a mere shirt dressed in faded silk, which he could never dream to possess, and in consequence thinking himself to be a big man, for with many, is it not the dress that makes the man. **outward things** : outward appearances; **abusing his man in that coat** : for it is an insult to show a man a consideration which is ill suited to his position. Suppose we tell our servants "Oh, great Sir, please come here and confer on us this favour." It is but an insult. So also to dress a man in his master's clothes. **Which a month etc** : this coat presented to the servant, was but a short time ago regarded as being of an excellent dress to make the master who wore it to become proud. Ladies are worse sinners in this respect of presentation of costly dress. Here the lady presents a good or a bad dress as according to her humour whether she is well or ill pleased.

Page 21.

In Sir Roger's opinion, a presentation of clothes is no presentation; if a master could lift his servant from that humiliating position by granting on him some decent property for his good services, and create an independent living, then he has conferred real benefit. **an husband**: an husbandman or a manager; **the skill of the purse**: the best manner in which money is spent. **cardinal**: the one virtue on which others depend. **frugality is the support of the generosity**: It is only by being economical, one could be generous. **fine**: amount stipulated to be paid by the new tenant before he takes on lease a property after it has become vacant; **tenement**: holding of land. **to go into the world**: to enter on an independent career of life, by conferring the land on the servant; **make the stranger pay**: without as the owner of the property taking the amount, pass it on to a deserving servant. **to have no will.........livelihoods**: Sir Roger does not want his servants' minds to be enslaved to him always, but he is for creating in them self respect and self reliance by creating for them occupations **freed** from menial service at others households. **All the difference etc**: The Spectator says however independent of servitude may be one who has been enabled to leave Sir Roger's service, a servant is the better to continue under Sir Roger, for his manners are so well polished and the treatment he receives is so gentlemanly. **manumission**: being freed from service of the hand; *i.e.*, to be granted freedom from service. Even in according such treatment Sir Roger is so practical, for it helps the master as he gets willing service and helps the servant by inspiring him with the hope that sooner or later he will become independent by faithful service. **There is something etc** : The Spectator says what a strange set of people are those who desire to take all kinds of works from their servants but give nothing to those who give pleasure to them, **extremity of their fortunes** : driven to the other extreme, *i.e.*, become poor and miserable. **undone** : ruined. **that fortune.........them** : that except for the ill luck which has made the master as poor as the servant, the other differences in their position continued as before ; *i.e.*, the master was still a master, and the servant was a servant.

Page 22.

Admonition : advice. **sent coachman's grandson to prentice** : had the kindness to pay the amount required to train the grandson of his coachman as an apprentice to some trade, so that the boy after training might commence his career in an independent trade or profession. **in a livery** : in that mode of dress to indicate his position in the family, *i.e.*, a servant. **taken with some sudden illness** : probably fainting fit or cramp in the limbs brought by cold. **took off the dress** : So that he might not continue in that menial position any more ; **bounty** : an act of good-will. **pretty seat** : neat residence or estate. **There lived a worthy gentleman** : note Sir Roger's innate courtesy and modesty, for unlike others he would not boast of his generosity, or his pride by calling the other "once my old servant." **Dissatisfied etc** : nakedness etc., but Sir Roger was not a man of false self-respect, and even at the risk of being ridiculed he would gratefully and permanently acknowledge the service of a faithful servant. **Habit** dress.

VI.

ADDISON.] **[No 108.**

"Out of breath for no purpose, and very busy about nothing."

Page 23.

In this essay the Spectator gives an apt description of junior members of great English families. As in England the law to succession of ancestral estates is the law of **primogeniture** or the first born male member being entitled to the estate, the brothers have no manner of share in the property except bare maintenance. Having no work to do, they become gentlemen at large, with no mind to repair their position to acquire qualification to set them up in independent means of livelihood. Such a life has a devastating and degenerating effect on the higher society. The Spectator conveys a moral that at least these young men could turn their attention to trade and commerce and earn a fortune, though unfitted for learned professions like law, medicine, aud church. **with his service** : with his compliments being ever at his service. **Jack** : a species of river fish. See the how.........see how the bait is caught by the fish **Bowling-green** : field where the game of Bowls is played. Bowl is a ball of wood or other material rolled on a level surface at play. A game which has almost gone out of use in England, as football and other games have taken their place. **whip wanted a lash :** the thong or cord, or anything attached to a whip for flogging. **not been out of the saddle** : always riding ; the reference to Eton is here Will Wimble has gone there to ride but not to study. **Curious**: because the Spectator's duty was to note curious characters and incidents: **bred to no business** : Not trained to any profession. **of his game**: in charge of his hunting and hawking arrangements. **a pack of dogs**: with a pack of dogs. **handicrafts**: Here the letter '*i*' is intrusive, work in which skill of hand could be shown. **may-fly**: So called after the insect appearing in May season; here in reference to an artificial fly of that kind intended to be offered as a bait to fish.

Page 24.

To a miracle: with great skill; **angle-rods**: fishing rods. **officious fellow**: eager to do some office or duty; now **officious**: means meddlesome. **a tulip. root**: tulip is a plant of the lily family. This beautiful flower was much worn in the times of Addison as a compliment to the King William of Holland, as the Dutch are fond of this flower. The root is carried by Wimble to grow the plant. **exchanges**: arranges to exchange. **young heirs**: a satirical hit against young men whiling away their fortune and times in frivolous occupations when they succeed to large estates, in the company of people like Will Wimble. **Setting-dog**: a dog trained to sit opposite the game hunted down for hunters to seize it; **made**: trained. **garters**: strings or bands to tie a stocking to the leg. **How they wear**: has a double meaning; how the ladies are doing or how serviceable are the garters he has given them; **make up**: approach; **hazle-twigs**: twigs of the hazle tree; spelt also **hazel**: the twigs are used for fishing rods or walking sticks. **discovered**: showed. **shuttle cocks**: cork fashioned to a cone with feathers stuck in it used in indoor games to serve the purpose of an indoor tennis on a rainy day. **Cock pheasant**: a male bird which he disturbed to fly from its place of concealment. **odd and uncommon etc**: Note the character of Spectator who delights in studying the nature of people who have developed peculiar ways ; **game** ; they are the people I hunt after.

Page 25.

Novelty : a character striking new. **served up** : prepared and served ; this shows the kindly consideration of Sir Roger to respect the wishes of Will Wimble that his present of the Jack must be used by Sir Roger, See how Will Wimble could monopolise all conversation by speaking in a detailed manner on his favourite subjects. **late invention**: recent discovery : quail-pipe a reed used as a pipe to sound a note to lure the bird. The Spectator now begins to moralise on the waste of brain energy by such junior members. He speaks with pity on the stupidity of the members of noble families to think that no member of their family should degrade himself, according to their meaningless conception by taking to trade ; rather would they allow them to waste their time in useless pursuits. The country becomes the worse for such waste. **Another station** : another sphere. **Humour** ; notion.

Page 26.

Liberal art or profession : liberal here means liberating the mind or enlarging it like culture. **launched** : put into ; **narrow** : very limited ; **greater** : than even that of their ancestral fortune ; **Physic** : medicine ; **well turned** : well suited ; **Inculcated** : driven into the mind ; taught with all emphasis.

VII.

STEELE.] **[No. 109.**

" Of plain good sense, untutored in the schools."

Gallery ; is an apartment of much greater length than breadth, serving as a passage to other rooms ; here stands for such a place being set apart for the lodging of family pictures. **conversation :** here mental contact. **Who were as silent as myself :** a gentle reference to the silence of the Spectator ; Sir Roger says no place would be so agreeable to the mood of his guest as this picture gallery, where he could put himself in silent communion with the full drawn picture of Sir Roger's ancestors. **were now arrived: had** now arrived ;-till about the 18th century, parts of the auxiliary verb were used in the place of the parts of the verb **have. Note the character of Sir Roger :** that he was ; **blunt, without care to preserve the appearance of chain of thought ; his pride of noble birth. the force of dress :** each period of time had its own characteristic method of dress ; Addison develops this idea in other essays. Dress indicates the character of the person.

Page 27.

Jetting : projecting ; **habit :** dress ; Harry : Henry the VII, the grandfather of Queen Eeizabeth. **yeomen of the guard :** :a famous regiment of tall men who protected the person of the king or queen ; now such men are chosen to guard the Tower, **Politic :** well devised or or wise **the face expanded :** makes it look as it were bigger and broader. Tilt-yard ; an open place for holding tournaments ; these were held as long as there were some vestiges of days of chivalry or feudal times. **whitehall :** a famous palace where the Stuarts kings often resided. **look you, Sir, in this manner :** the characteristic method of Sir Roger in giving lively narrations ; **pommel :** projecting portion of the front part of the saddle ; **rid** : rode ; this past tense is now obsolete; lists; the open space of the tournament. **expose:** to bring into contempt or ridicule. **Mistress:** lady who was loved by both; this was done with a view, according to the ideas of the times that the lady would no more love the defeated man but the victor. **pardonable insolence**: a pride that deserved to be excused. **bass-viol**: a musical instrument producing a deep note, pretty long, played upon, held between the legs. **basket-hilt sword**: a sword, the handle of which was covered by steel made in the manner of a basket, so that that portion of the hand will ever be kept safe to have a grip on the sword and attack the enemy.

Page 28.

Maid-of-honour: lady chosen from noble family to attend upon the ladies of the royal family. **Petticoat**: a loose under garment worn by ladies. **as if in a drum**: a humourous description how ladies looked by wearing such hooped petticoats which bulged much at the hips. **For all**: though; **country-wife**: a lady who retired to the country after her marriage. **Receipt**: or recipe: a prescription of things required with their proper proportions to make anything. **hasty-pudding**: pudding prepared of flour or oatmeal mixed in boiling water and milk. **a white pot**: a preparation which has certain proportions of raisins, cardamoms, mace, rose water. sugar, marrow etc. The description of this lady clearly shows that unlike the ladies of the present times who hate anything like a useful and healthy life, she loved really wifely ways. **against her will**: she could not marry though she liked to marry: **homely**: not of great beauty and simple; **poisoned three mastiffs** killed three furious dogs; **deer-stealers**: *i.e.*, people who came in the dark of the night to steal deer in the estates of the family; **Romp**: a woman, not modest, but of manly manners. **observe etc**: the description well suits a man of fashion desirous to shine in society. **Sonneteer**: with members of the higher class it was a fashion to write sonnets, to show their culture, and also express their love moods. **Slashes**: cuts in the coat to expose to view the inner dress—for example an open coat exposes to view a waist-coat made of some fine stuff. **that had too much............world**: though he claimed to have much sense, it was of no use to him to win his bread. **No justice but good manners**: spoke and acted nicely but cruel at heart.

Page 29.

He would............on: he would not take the trouble even to remove the gloves, and most light heartedly put his signature which meant the loss of half his estates. **he would not put his hat**: it is bad manners to be with one's hat before a lady; rather would he respect his position before a lady than care for the preservation of the country by wearing the hat. **Squeezing the hand**: humourous how lovers from being distant from the lady of their love indicated their love by squeezing the hand or take undue advantage. **by all hands**: by all people. **Retrieved**: restored; see how the plain good Sir Roger has no false ideas of self-respect and tells the Spectator that the present good condition of the family is all owing to a man who was no relation of the family. **Sir Andrew Freeport**: being a whig with free ideas and no conservative ways of thinking would delight in speaking about the break in the direct descent of the baronet's family. **We winked** etc: we shut our eyes to such defects in dissent as all we cared them was money to restore the family position. **Embarrassed** : naturally poor Sir Roger would feel troubled to speak about such a blemish. **tradesman - gentleman** : he combined business like ways and politeness ; **undone** : ruined. **bankruptcy** : as ruined a bank would be if it made no punctual payments, so he thought his whole reputation gone, if he could not keep his word. **integrity** : truthfulness ; it is quite impossible at all times and under all circumstances to keep one's word inspite of one's sincerity ; **offices** : duties ; **incumbent** : devolving or falling. **to go into employments of State** : great offices of government ; **snares of ambition** : fell into the trap of greed to take bribes etc.

Page 30.

Great and good : he felt troubled that one may be great in the view of the world but given to temptation : and one may be good without the chance to become great ; that such should be the world. **Husbandman** : careful in expenditure. **Secret bounties** : without show he was highly charitable after looking to his wants. **Slacken his industry :** never wanting in industry. **Battle of Worcester :** 1651, when Cromwell defeated the son of Charles I ; also called the crowning mercy of Worcester.

The whim...................... s mplicity : The Spectator says what a queer being the Knight should be to speak of a man who did no fighting as if he fought and escaped from danger, and at the same time in the way he analysed the thoughts and doings of his ancestors to show such an amount of common sense and shrewd observation : such was Sir Roger ; he combined in him eccentricity mixed with a good deal of excellent sense and great kindness. We are going to see this was because of his disappointment in love affairs with a fair widow. Sir Roger was a curious combination of eccentricity, simplicity and robust common sense.

VIII.

ADDISON.] **[No. 110.**

All things are full of horror and affright
And dreadfulev'n the silence of the night.

In this essay the Spectator attacks the superstitious beliefs of the times, particularly the belief in the existence of the ghosts. **Old Abbey**: old dwellings, particularly churches and temples are taken to be the fit haunts of ghosts; **cawing in another region**; making their characteristic noise as if an a distant place. **Natural prayer**: prayer offered spontaneously or untaught to do so; **feedeth the young ravens**; God takes such kind care of the most insignificant objects of creation such as crows and even objects of less significance. The quotation is from the Bible. " Who giveth fodder unto the cattle; and feedeth the young ravens that call upon him". **Retirement**; retired place.

Page 31.

Butler; naturally such a man as an inferior servant, would hold superstitious views; **heard............fall.** Here the Spectator ridicules even the natural phenomenon of the rustling of leaves has a terrible effect, as if that was caused by ghosts; **proper scenes:** the retiredness of the place, the ruined nature of the building, the tall old trees casting gloomy shadows even during the day time, the noise of the ominous bird the crow the elder bushes emitting a peculiar small etc. **elder bushes**: bushes formed of the well-known of the British tree. It is of rapid growth of white flowers and purple berries. The plant is connected with the suicide of Judas the traitor who betrayed Jesus Christ. **A church-yard**; till recently the christian places of worship were also burial places. The souls of the departed people would be taken by the ignorant to haunt such places. **Echo** : would be taken to be caused by the intangible and at times the invisible ghosts; **heightens** : increases; **supernumerary** : innumerable. Locke, John, a great philosopher, 1632-1704, Author of **Civil Government, Essay on Human Understanding,** etc. **Association of ideas** etc : one idea coupled with another idea would contribute to create a peculiar impression, which would not be the case if each idea by itself worked on the mind. The darkness is not so fearful, as darkness and echo, again these are not so fearful, as when they are intensified by the retiredness and gloomy association of the burial of a number of the dead etc., prejudice=peculiar feeling or trend; **goblins** : mischievous spirits. sprights=spirits (old spelling).

Page 32.

Inculcates=dins in or teaches, or enforces; **conspired** : joined its forces; **a cow grazing** : here the Spectator gives the rational explanation for such a frightful impression; **footman**=servant; **reputation**=notoriety or bad impression; **nailed up** : closed so as not to be opened. **Compass** =extent; **exorcised**=drove the devils out; **lay**=took his bed to convince the superstitious that there was no devil to bother him. **Dissipated**=drove away; **reigned**=took hold of the minds of people. Religious people are credited by their spiritual power to frighten devils out. **Particular**= entered into the particulars.

Page 33.

Imagination : imaginary existence of ghosts by entertaining such ideas in his imagination. **Sacred and profane :** christian and non-christian. Here the Spectator gives some arguments to prove the existence of spirits. For such a belief has been in existence quite from the earliest times, and that in all nations, and in countries, christian or heathen ; a belief in which philosophers, poets, nay even historians shared. **Lucretious :** a Roman philosopher of the first century B. C. According to his philosophy everything in the world could be easily proved without bringing in divine agency. This philosophy approximates to the Sankhya philosophy of the Hindus or the materialistic school of modern philosophy. He believes in the existence of ghosts, and explains their presence as owing to the embodiment of particles which for long years have been escaping from the body of the living being.

Agesilaus : King of Sparta who succeeded his brother to the throne in 399 B. C. He proved to be a man of strong character, and one of the most famous kings and soldiers that ever Sparta possessed.

Page 34.

Virginity : the first to marry : **free thee** : by taking you away from this life. **Acquaintance** : like furniture takes no plural. **Impertinent**=irrelevant. **Immortality of the soul:** the soul never dies and even after the body perishes, exists in another world. **Enjoy...............virtue** ; let him believe as he chooses, but not convert another to his view, as such examples go to make people virtuous at least.

IX.

ADDISON.] **[No. 112.**

"First in obedience to thy country's rites
Worshir th' immortal Gods."

The Spectator attempts in this essay the cleansing effect of the Sunday worship, socially, bodily and spiritually.

Country Sunady : Sunday as observed in the country-side. **The seventh day** : or the sabbath was the day when God rested from his labours after the creation. **Human institution** : considered purely from the side of its effect on human beings ; **polishing**=making better, **degenerate** : degrade ; **barbarians** : primitive people without the good effects of civilization : **were there not**=if there not have been.

Page 35.

Best faces : both in cleanly look, and mental cheer ; **habits**=dress : **indifferent subjects**=all manner of topics **rust of the week**=all the undesirable things which have gathered during the week, either the dirt and dust, or the vicious ideas ; **a figure** : a prominence ; a position of advantage : **Church-yard** : the open space round the church is full of burial mounds ; this is the place where the villager shines at his best and carries on his love and other affairs ; **change** : the Royal Exchange of London where the financial transactions of great importance take place. **Change** : is a separate word in itself, not the shortened form of **exchange** : **Parish politics** : village affairs ; before the **bell rings** : before the people are summoned for worship. **Sir Roger** being a Tory is a high churchman, and hence the church would be full of embellishments; **texts**: quotations from the Bible inculcating some precept, put in shining letters all over the church walls. **Railed in the communion-table**: has put rails wood or some metal round the table whereon are placed the wine and bread of the sacrament. After some ceremony, these are taken by the church goers as if they enter into communion with God. **Responses**: replies given by the congregation to questions put by the preacher. **hassock**: a stuffed pillow like thing to kneel upon. **Itinerant**: travelling; going from place to place; *i.e.*, the villages attached to the **Parish-tunes of the psalms**: the proper method of singing the psalms which are more meant to be sung than merely read. **out-do**=excel.

This and the succeeding paragraphs show how practical minded Sir Roger is to make religion attractive to the illiterate village folk, and that done not for the sake of religious improvement, but for all sided improvement of the villagers. Suffer=allow, **to sleep in beside himself**; humorous hit against Sir Roger; **Recovering**=waking; **Stands and looks** etc: an example of the eccentricity of Sir Roger.

Page **36.**

Peculiarities=eccentricities; **lengthening**; drawling the verse; **matter**=subject matter; **Amen**: Hebrew word meaning "So be it", given at the end of prayer. **Kicking his heels for diversion**: knocking his heels together to kill time, an act which would distract the attention of others in the church and thus disturb the religious function; **polite**=polished; well mannered; **as foils..................qualities**: a foil is a thing of inferior quality which sets to advantage, something of higher value. These eccentricities of Sir Roger bring into prominence the numerous excellent qualities of Sir Roger, is=has; **chancel** : is that part of the church where the singing party stand, divided off from the altar or the communion table; also the place where the people of high rank sat. **Whom he does not see** etc : the question serves a double purpose (1) of his interest in the welfare of his tenants, (2) how they could not escape his notice for not attending the Sunday service, **Catechising day** : day when children were questioned about their knowledge of Bible.

Page 37.

Flitch=a slice; **Clerk**=one who helps generally the person; **incumbent** : holder of the office (of clerk). So far the Spectator gave not only the eccentricities of the knight, (1) sleeping during sermon, (2) saying Amen thrice, (3) drawling the song, (4) stand up during worship, (5) call a man to his religious duty, but also his excellent common sense to better the religious atmosphere of the parish, (1) provide conveniences and attractions, gift of prayer books, hassock to kneel, railing the communion table, adorn the church with illuminated texts, increase in the clerk's salary, promise of the place after the death of the old incumbent, flitch of bacon to induce the mother to send the littles ones to Sunday worship, and notice of the absence of church goers. His eccentricities are as harmless as his common sense is admirable.

The fair understanding etc : Addison bewails how any misunderstanding between the only two men of importance in the village makes the life of the village miserable and demoralised. People take undue advantage of such quarrels and become bad themselves adopting the ways of the wicked bigmen, as if wickedness would not affect one's height of position and importance. The church, in consequence as a civilizing force loses its influence, and the haughty squire grows from bad to worse, and the parson himself cultivates undesirable qualities like hatred, talking scandal etc. 'Squire: Esquire', a gentleman; **preaching**: saying things against. **Revenged**: to take revenge. **Atheists**: unbelievers in God; **tithestealers**: tithe is the tenth part of the produce to be given to the maintenance of religion; so it comes to be withheld when people lose their regard for religion. **insinuates**: hints indirectly. **to such an extremity**: to the utmost limit. **to pay for him** etc: this would mean that in the presence of the congregation by enumerating the faults of the Squire, he would pray to God to pardon the Squire of his sins; i.e., he would expose the wickedness of the Squire. deference: respect; hardly: never.

X.

STEELE.] **[No. 113.**

"Her looks were deeply impressed in his heart"

Page 38.

This essay has not only a fund of humour in it, but also gives the cause why Sir Roger behaves at times eccentrically. affliction=disappointment of a serious nature. **settled upon**: be associated closely with the memory of; **sprig**: off shoot or twig. **but I should**: I cannot but. **but the ....revive**: without those thoughts reviving; **carve**: cut out; students of "As you like It" should know how Orlando cut out the name of Rosalind on the trees in the forest of Arden. **To attempt...........deeper**: when to exhaust their passion of love, they cut out the letter, they do not see how these letters being permanent impression on the tree forcibly remind them of love. **industriously**:

carefully. **raised** : elevated ; because now the Spectator was able to know it was for a good reason that the knight's mind came to be severely affected ; else he would have ever been a cheerfulman.

Page 39.

Good neighbourhood : excellent terms of relationship with neighbours. **Sheriff of the county** : the most coveted honorary, but expensive post in the county or as we say the district. **equipage** : all that was required to equip or fit me for the position. **figure and behaviour** : my person and my conduct ; Rid=rode : **music** : whenever big officers visited a place they were welcomed with music. **a feather in 'my cap** : a feather was struck in the hat to show the dignity of his position ; hence the idiomatic expression he has added a feather to his cap. **Well bitted** : would either mean that the bits were of costly material like silver ; or that the horses were kept under perfect control by the mouth being bitted, and when the bits were drawn up, the horse would throw up its head, and make an imposing show. **balconies** : the platforms projecting from the windows or building supported on pillars, and railed round for people to come out and have an ample open view. **cause**: is the same word as **case** : **dower** : the property, usually a third, a widow gets of her husband's share **Commanding** : splendid looking : **resignation** : patient submission. **pretty Uneasiness** : the troubled condition itself giving a beauty to the face ; **wistful** : thoughtfully eager ; **murrain** : usually a dreadful cattle disease ; here a plague on her. **but I bowed............booby** : then I yielded to her beauty like a fool ; **Captivated calf** : a spirited young calf captured. **was become** : had become.

Page 40.

Upon trial: being tried. **billet** : small pieces of paper here containing questions to be put by her advocate. **Council:** counsel=lawyer. **prejudiced** : inclined. **Groundless** and **frivolous** : having no basis and being vexatious. **there was not............Advantage** : before her lawyer had argued in her favour only half the number of points, the people who were inclined in her favour, thought all was said to prove her claims. **but indulge** etc : do not go further than creating admiration so as to result in marriage. **according to the seasons** : welltodo people have both a town and country residence, and in the fashionable part of the year when dances and other social engagements take place they move to towns. **far gone** : far advanced. **who is a witness** etc : this woman who is in her confidence having heard her mistress so often speak against lovers, does not allow people to approach her with a view to love her. **has distinguished** etc : see the humour here ; the poor Knight takes it a compliment paid to no other lover of the perverse widow when, she says of all her lovers, who in her estimation are no better than beasts, Sir Roger is the best of brutes, for he is both tame and has some humane or softer feelings. **he rallied me** : in saying this this reporter thought he was supporting or complimenting me as having found some encouragement at her hands. **made new liveries** etc : so that all this magnificence of dress etc may make me shine better in her eyes. **Addresses** : approaches of love.

Page 41.

Inflame.........respect : create great emotions of love, and yet without making the disappointed lovers without thinking ill of her, to speak of her with respect and regard.

mistress of this Art : to be the possessor of this skill. **wit** : lively natural talk ; **good sense** : good common sense. **If you won't............desire** : If you are not captivated with some point of her physical beauty, and make her know that it is no good in her part to captivate you, then she adopts some other device by which instead of a desire to love her, you are made to admire her qualities other than physical. **that composure in her motion** : there is nothing hurried about her movements ; **Complacency** : gracefulness ; **form** : outside loveliness as contrasted with ; **merit** : intellectual and other qualities in which you are not her equal. **desperate Scholar** : too much given to books. **no country gentleman** : a hit against the great people of the country who were not well read in those days. **the posture of a picture** : not in a natural manner, but arranged so artificially to have a great effect on the beholders ; discovered : revealed. **with such an awe.........speechless** : this is one of the tricks practised by the lady, which was to make you spell bound with her pose. **but she made** : than she took. **love and honour** : love must be joined to honour at all times ; real lovers never betray the ladies they love ; but there are others whose one aim is to enjoy the beauty of a woman and then prove false to her. **votaries** : devoted and faithful lovers. **Was as learned.........Europe** : Sir Roger was so far carried away by the charms of this woman, he pays her this compliment. Addison shows that it is the way with lovers. **whether she...........sentiments** : this was but an outward compliment to ask the knight whether he agreed with her. **last confusion** : confusion of the greatest degree ; **mailcious aid** : who helped her mistress by adding to her mischief. **Sir Roger...........speak** : in other words the knight is a fool who has nothing to say at present in reply to the grand discourse of her mistress.

Page 42.

Kept their countenances : though inclined to laugh at the Knight's stupidity, yet maintained a serious face; **casuists** : pretenders to a skilful handling of subjects of morality; **Barbarity** : cruelty, because of never allowing an occasion for the poor Knight to express his love. **conquer the sphinx by posing her** : one could conquer this woman only by attacking her in her own way, that is, proposing a subject of discussion which she is not capable of handling effectively. **Sphinx** or **sphyinx** : a she monster; half woman the upper part of the body, and the other half a lion. She killed many by proposing the riddle to answer, the failure to do so being punished with death. The riddle was; what is that being who has first four feet, and then two feet, and at last three feet, though the voice is but one. The more the feet, the less the strength. When Oedipus the king of Thebes, said the creature is but man; who crawls on his hands and legs while a babe, and then walks on his two legs, when strong as a man, and besides these legs has a strong stick or three legs in his old age, the Sphynx fell from the pyramid and perished. There is a pyramid of the Sphnyx in Egypt, and this monster figures much in Egyptian art. **I have been credibly** etc.: again Sir Roger begins to lull himself into the conviction that if there be any being she loves, it is but himself, on the authority of a man who reliably (credibly) informed him (that she loved him), though one cannot put much faith in what is said. Yet there was one sign of her love, that when her bosom heaved with love, she was obliged to put her hand to her breast and arranged the laced part of the dress (tucker). Then to add conviction to her love of me she bent her gaze down, when she saw how she was admired. **Public table** : the humour here is poor Roger takes the occasion of his dining with her in a public place, as if it had all the charm of dining at her table, or getting her to accept his invitation and dine at his table. **tansy** : a preparation consisting of many things like spices, eggs etc. : **helped me** : gave me to partake—which Sir Roger takes as a proof of her love to him. **I grow irregular** : here is the key to Sir Roger's harmless eccentricities. He himself admits that this woman was responsible to much of his oddities.

Page 43.

Inconsistency : is that such a sensible man as Sir Roger should behave at times so out of the way. **Martial** : a Latin poet of the first century A.D. **Dum** etc. : though silent, talks of her i.e., his mind is at all times full of her thoughts. **Epigram** : a great truth put in a brief or striking manner.

XI.

STEELE.] **[No. 114.**

" Nothing is so dreadful as to be thought to be needy and poor."

Economy : good management ; **fortunes** : success in life ; **good breeding** : trained to polite ways ; **pretending behaviour** : showing oneself other than what actually one is **glass was taken** : wine was drunk.

Page 44.

Fuddled : drunk to a point of losing the power of thinking ; **dipped** : badly indebted. **eating out with usury** :

high rates of interest making the property become less and less in value. **Stomach** : inclination or mood according to the old physiological notions, man's moods were regulated by certain liquids or humour, and certain parts of the body as stomach etc had certain gifts of qualities as anger, moroseness bravery etc. **Inquietudes** : restlessness (brought about by anxiety how to discharge the debt etc,) **affronts** : insults (offered by creditors). **Canker** : worm which eats into rose and other plants ; here the debts which reduce a man both physically and mentally to an abject condition. **Rather than it shall** etc : the false sense of self-respect will not allow the man to sell part of the property and clear his debts, as then he would be put down as a man with an income less than that of other landlords. **the torment of poverty** : all the terrible pains caused by poverty. **Unnatural** : not coming from the heart, but served to maintain his position as a rich man in the estimation of others for his is ಬಡಕಲ್ ಜಂಬ. **is not at home** : his mind is elsewhere. **waste** and **carelessness** : indifference born of an anxious mind. **covered indigence, magnificent poverty** : good examples of Oxymoron, a figure of speech which has words opposed to each other in meaning, but gives excellent sense ; poverty covered by luxury ; really the man is poor, but to hide it, shows himself to be rich. **within compass** : within the limit of one's means ; **libertine** : is liberty, but going beyond the limit, and thus becoming a grave defect. **Service** : things served at home. **Common way of management** : the purpose of the essay is indicated here.

The Spectator papers being meant to correct the vices and false views life of the period, one other form of the defect is pointed out here, that is how big landlords came to be ruined by undue notions of self-respect, and without bravely coming forward as men free from debts, by selling a portion of the property, would rather allow their debts to grow because of enormous interest and in the end lose all; their peace of mind and property too. **An extent............ pass**: a pass being a narrow passage could effectively be guarded with a few men even against great number of enemies, but the charge of a vast stretch of open land would require great number of soldiers, which the officer has not. **personate**: make others believe what actually you are not. **really has**: really speaking, is freed from debts. **Unpardonable vanity**: certain vanities could be excused, as for example if a man does some noble deeds and prides upon it, but not this kind of vanity born of a false idea of self-respect. **Reduce**: bring down.

Page 45.

Fatal error: mistakes which bring about one's ruin. **So soft a name**: the word error is rather mild, it should be called a crime. **Contrary behaviour**: *i.e.*, to be called less rich than what the man was before. **advance**: promote, for no loss would then be sustained by payments of large interest. **Condition.........to**: being really rich. **Laertes and Irus**: are two historical names taken from Greece here used to represent respectively a rich man and a poor man. **he would save four shillings in the pound**: that is interest at 4 shillings a pound, which year after year accumulating would swallow up all his income of fifteen hundred pounds a year. **a fellow of Yesterday**: an up start; whose importance does not go beyond a few years. **Well born beggars**: his children though well born destined to become beggars soon, as his father would leave no property behind. **Every twelve month.........child** : each child means so much of expenditure for rich men's children require nurses, tutors, carriage, etc. and each child thus would cost the parents as much money as is recovered as rent from tenants. **abomination** : hatred ; though neighbours one hates the other for his ways of living. **Irus** etc : The man who was once poor is afraid to be thrown into that position again by improvident living, and the rich man is ashamed to admit his present poverty-striken circumstances, and hence by extravagant expenditure he could ill afford, gets to be irretrievably poor. **so near affinity** : both relating to poverty. **manners** : ways of living and modes of thought. **Further progress** : advance away from ; **provisions** : providing themselves with such things as would help them in the future. **Stock-jobbing** : speculations in the share market to buy and sell shares to an advantage.

Page 46.

Seed : source, *i.e.*, Irus takes to these occupations to make money so as not to become poor **riot** : careless living ; **prodigality** : useless extravagance. **But both these** etc : Addison takes a middle course he is neither for a niggardly man who acquires wealth by contemptible means, nor for a man who spends blindly without fear of the future. **In the order of men suitable to our character** : according to our position in life. **the care of superfluities** : caring for things which are not at all necessary. **neglect of necessaries** : not spending even on necessary things. **out of nature** : beyond the limit of a life which is not natural to their position. **Mr. Cowley** : Abhraham Cowley noted for his essays and his poems 1618-1667. **magnanimity** : broad views of life. **considerable** : deserving consideration, i.e., regard and respect. The elegant author : Bishop Spratt. **as amiable :** as dear to the readers. **great vulgar :** Cowley's expression in reference to people who though of some great position in life are mean and contemptible. **no small :** emphatic for great. **wisest men :** such as Horace the great moral satirist and others. **point to himself :** has as his aim of life. **cheat himself into a tranquillity :** cultivate peace of mind. **cheat :** because he acquires by a strong will power what he does not actually at that time possess. **ignorant envy :** envy which results from ignorance. **Restless :** because their mind being always engaged in making money. **inexcusable contempt :** a contempt of happy people less than he in worldly position which does not deserve any excuse. We have no business to look down upon people because they have cultivated a frame of mind always peaceful. **sailing by some compass :** just as in the wide ocean a compass helps a man to steer his course, so also a fixed principle would help a man to have an unanxious existence.

Page 47.

Bewildered : confused what to do as if thrown in a wilderness. **putting on unnecessary** etc **:** he would be a mad man who bandages his head against head-ache which he has not ; so also to imagine that a host of troubles would attack you, and that therefore you should be fully armed to meet them is rather bringing trouble. **mechanic being :** one who moves like a machine without any thinking of his own ; **below :** does not deserve. **It is possible.** The Spectator apologises to those critics who may say "yes, Spectator, you are well housed and fed, and therefore you can afford to be philosophical, but if you are in our position, your views would be different". **Which is abstracted** : which has no tangible connection.

The Spectator admits to some extent the charge, and says he could not help it as his stay with Sir Roger is so agreeable to his mind. **Landskip** : landscape. **ostentatious** : vainly showy. **writing philosopher** : at least wise enough to write, though not to act or feel. **Still** : always. The lines mean that if there be a person who is mean enough to be regarded as a great person, he deserves to be deprived by God of even that little he possesses.

XII.

ADDISON.] **[No 115.**

" Desire to possess a sound mind in a sound body."

Two kinds : for instance a rich man splits fuel to develop his muscles, the poor man to earn a living. In the former case it becomes exercise, and the latter case work for hire.

The Spectator gives practical advice how work would keep people from mischief, for it both helps to promote the purity of mind, and the health of body. **Strainers** : for in the gland the process of secretion of certain essential fluids takes place. **proper engine** etc : our body is an engine, which requires, careful fitting, oiling, etc., and our souls are the motor power or the men who work it. **Comprehend** : include.

Page 48.

Tendors : are a bundle of fibres by which a muscle is attached to a bone. **veins** : tubes bringing blood to the heart to be purified, and arteries, are blood vessels carrying from the heart purified blood to the sustenance of the body. **imperceptible :** you cannot put a pin point without breaking some blood vessel or other, for such is the over minute mechanism of the body. **niceties of anatomy** : the minute details of the build of the body. **frequent motions** : unless a man moves about freely, and if he is stuck to a chair, he must soon suffer from ill-health, as stagnant water not touched by air or light. **Infinitude** : countless. **ferments the humours** : students must note that in the days of Addison, physiology as a science was not well advanced, and so some ideas he gives here are but crude; for instance to take the body consisting of some liquids, the want or abundance of which affecting the condition of the body is not true in all its details ; however the meaning is about certain chemical actions in the different kinds of liquids, so that the resultant might be the creation of certain combinations to help the bodily functions. **throws off** ; sends out of the body by evaporation secretion etc. **the body cannot subsist** etc. **mens Sanamens copora** ; a healthy mind in a healthy body ; one cannot be when the other is wanting. **imagination** ; mind. **refining** ; fitting properly ; or preparing so as to be useful. **present laws ;** as the connection between soul and body is at present understood. **Spleen ;** moody temper, brought about by want of exercise; again this is another instance of old physiological beliefs. **studious and sedentary ;** sitting at a place studying or given to study (without taking any exercise). **vapours ;** ill humour, as the ladies of the days of Addison were much like Indian ladies now ; sitting at a place and talking scandal. **proper ;** well suited ; **pliancy ;** not rigid, to be easily bent or influenced. **contortions ;** twistings ; **dilatation ;** expansion.

Page 49.

And that we might etc ; without any necessity to persuade, the body is so built up, that of one's own accord, one must have some exercise or movement, if one wants to obtain what one desires to possess in life. **Raiment ;** dress ; **come at ;** possess or obtain. **Providence :** God, because He provides man with things necessary for life. **laboured ;** cultivated. **as for those** etc ; as regards the rich people who are not obliged to work for their food, even these must do some work or other, if their bodily condition must be in tune, else they would become miserable. **Indefatigable :** untiring ; **other :** either a sea animal of amphibious habits, much prized for its fur, or a dog employed to catch other. **arsenal :** a place for keeping armour, guns, etc. **havoc :** ruin. **noses:** of foxes killed in the hunt. **one fox :**

Page 50.

particularly gave a deal of trouble and expense to the knight ; **gelding :** castrated horse.

The widow creating vexation in his mind, to drive it off, the knight in an angry mood took to hunting with vigour, and killed a number of animals etc ; sits • has its haunt, a technical term. The Spectator has a partiality for riding : **accommodated :** properly suited Sydenham ; Dr. Sydenham, a celebrated doctor ; 1624-1689. **mechanical :** as concerning the proper working of the bodily organs. **Medicina gymnastica :** exercise helping as tonic or medicine. **Dumbbell :** either end of this iron weight rounded like a bell, but making **no** noise.

Page 51.

All the pleasure etc **:** whereas when you box with another you have to give and receive blows, here by fighting with your own shadow taking it as another person, you exercise yourself without the blows; box=blow, blow with fists. This was systematically taught to young men in the good old days. **lay-out:** usefully engage. **evaporate the spleen:** evaporate the bad liquid expected to collect in the spleen, and thus make the man to become peaceful and cheerful.

The last paragraph suggests the thoughts of the poem "How happy is he born and taught" etc. Study, ease and recreation are both necessary for life.

XIII.

BUDGELL.] **[No. 116.**

"The echoing hills and chiding hounds invite"

The soundness of souls entirely depends upon action **bastile:** the state prison of France, destroyed during the French Revolution, which like the Tower in London was once a palace. **verily:** truly. **lost his senses:** became mad.

Page 52.

Coveys: broods or families. **tired.........hair:** though the Salmon is a big fish, yet by his angling skill he was able to tire it by holding in his hand a rod to which was attached but a single horse hair. **enmity towards foxes**: foxes do a lot of damage to the crops; **Vermin:** anything hateful, usually applied to bugs, fleas, etc. **Indeed the knight:** The Spectator humourously describes here the cunning way in which Sir Roger obtained thanks of the farmers; he had foxes imported into the neighbouring land, allowed them to do damage, and killed them after earning thanks. Sir Roger deserves to be excused, for such was his attachment to sports and particularly fox hunting. **managed** : trained. **Stone-horse** : stallion, so called of its being kept in the stall or stables ; a horse not castrated. **staked** : that is a piece of sharp spike being driven into the animal while jumping a fence. **to keep himself in action** : to be exceedingly energetic to take exercise. **beagles** : hound of a small stature, gifted with power of scent to track hares. **stop-hounds** : *i e.*, hounds that stop to take deep breath to track the game, which they have rightly scented. **mouths** : voice. **complete concert** : a concert is a musical performance several kinds of instruments are used, joined by the voices of the singers; so also here in the hunting pack there are different kinds of hounds, each with a voice of high or low pitch, and also of varying tones.

Page 53.

Bass : the tone being very low in a musical composition whether vocal or instrumental. **Counter-tenor** : *i.e.*, of a higher pitch than the tenor which is itself higher than the bass. This shows humorously how the hunting Knight found all the pleasures of music in the tones of his hunting dogs, each having its own peculiar quality either in pitch or tone, and all contributing to a **dog harmony** : as if it were. **flue** : is the soft flesh growth in the jaw. **sanded** : sandy color which indicates a hound of high breed. **with ears** etc : long ears, another sign of a dog of noble breed. **crook-kneed** : bending the knee nicely to run well. **dew-lapped** : with the fleshy growth under the throat growing so well as to touch the dew on the earth. **Thessaly** : is the Northern Province of Greece. **matched.........each** ; each gifted with a voice as if coming from bells, not all of the same pitch, but one subordinate to the other, so that the notes being on an ascending or descending scale, contributes to great harmony. **hallowed to**: when called to by the master; pad=horse for easy riding on roads. **benevolence:** character of Sir Roger to be loved by all. requited=rewarded (with recognition of their service) heath=grassy plain. **to beat:** try to locate where the game hunted was; **pop-out:** show its head out ;**furze brake**: bush of the furze plant. **by extending my arm:** this humourously shows the Spectator was not for speaking, but pointing to the game by stretching his arms.

Page 54.

None.........insignificant: each motion being of some considerable importance. **puss:** a cat, but in the language of hunter a hare. **that it was.........stole away**: a hit against the Spectator's extraordinary silence even on important occasions. The countrymen have by this time come to know that the Knight's guest is a silent gentleman, and because he has not spoken that the hare has **stolen away**: (a technical expression of the hunters, when they see the hunted creature running away from the bush where it was hiding), the game was almost on the point of being lost. **leaping hedges**: the Spectator was not a sportsman. **I was pleased to find**: this shows the Spectator's sense of gentleness or humanity. He was averse to killing. **Unravelling:** when the hare begins to double, the scent is lost by pursuing dogs: now they made out the direction, just like untying the knots in a stretch of thread. **deference**: respect; even dogs have a code **opened:** began to run after picking the scent; **raw:** inexperienced. **liar**: the dog that puts others on a wrong scent. **helpd his heart out:** cry as much as he could without being taken notice of by other dogs. **squatted** : sat down to recover breath in a secure place; **encompassed :** surrounded ; **put up again :** made to leave her hiding place.

Page 55.

Took a large field : covered by running a large area, **chiding :** a technical term used for the noise made by the hounds together when they have spotted the game. **Innocent** : here the Spectator, who is conscious of witnessing a cruel game in which the poor stood the chance of being killed, and therefore guilty to some extent, calls himself **innocent** : as he was not the **direct** cause of its fate; **spent** : exhausted ; **threw down the pole** : as their business of hunting was over.

Note the humanity of Sir Roger to save the life of the hare.

Page 56.

Pascal : a great French Savant of the 17th century. This French Philosopher says that if great people are surrounded by others or kill their time by some recreation or other, it is because they are conscious of their faults or defects, and to escape from the disagreeable thought paining them, they give all their time either to men or things. Hunting the hare is one of such engagements. **Silly** : innocent; **suffers :** allows ; **loses in the woods** : drowns his mind in something or other, except that it should not turn upon himself ; **woods** : could be taken by literally, forests where the hunting is done ; or metaphorically in some kind of absorbing occupation.

The Spectator mildly takes the French philosopher to task and says, though hunting may be bad exercise as a whole must not be condemned, for exercise helps the proper functioning of the soul, and had the philosopher taken his exercises regularly, he would not have died young, as he lived but about 40 years 1623—1662. **habit** : condition; **physic** : medicine. **John Dryden** : the great poet and dramatist 1631—1701; author of **Absalom and Achitophel, Alexander's Feast** etc. **The first..................made** : Physicians first came into existence to attend to those who wrecked their lives by immoral living. They flourish because the excessive indulgence of the people and their idle habits make them fall ill.

Page 57.

Strung : kept in excellent condition, as the wires of a musical instrument kept tight ; **pampered :** spoiled by evil methods of life; **Dwindled etc** : Instead of living a hundred year, our age has been shortened to seventy years : **unbought :** that could never be had for money ; **draught** : of medicine. **God............mend :** when God gave us this splendid body, it was not His intention that we should spoil it and work for repairs by Doctors, medicine etc.

XIV

ADDISON. No. 117.

> " With ideas of their own making they deceive themselves."

The Spectator in this essay continues his criticism against the superstitions of the people, and also warns them, not to be unjust to tottering, toothless old people, who are ill-treated as if they were the agents of the devil.

Neater: not taking this side or that; **engaging**: giving; **Hovering**: flying over before settling down on any particular object like birds etc. **determination**: settled conviction; **prepossession**: mind given up to some idea without any difference.

The whole introductory paragraph shows that the Spectator will weigh facts always before coming to any conclusion, and that particularly in matters which largely exercise the minds of the majority of people, hasty judgments must not be made.

He gives the arguments for and against witch-craft; **for** because it was believed in by people of different countries and at all times, **against**: but this belief was entertained by ignorant, illiterate, and weak minded people. And as what De Quincey said later that he believed in Astrology as a Science, though to him astrologers were humbugs, so also the Spectator says he believes in the existence of witchcraft, though not in the truthfulness of special instances cited to prove it. **Lapland and Norway**: these extreme cold countries to the north of Europe were particularly notorious as the home of witches. **Commerce**: dealings; **credulous**: easily believing; **infernal**: relating to the devil: **crazed**: another form of **cracked**, or mad; **impostures**: false appearances; **detected**: found out; **suspend**: to keep undetermined.

Page 58.

Certain: sure, proved by facts; **divided**: half for believing, and the other half not for believing; **in general**: as a whole; **speculation**: thought; **applied herself**: appealed to.

Otway, Thomas, 1651—1685, author of **Venice**

Preserved. Close: narrow; **double**: bent; **Mumbling**: muttering; **scalding rheum**: salt tears; **galled**: inflamed; **cold palsy**: palsy is a shortened form of paralysis: here rheumatic pains brought about by exposure to cold; **crooked**: bent; **striped hanging**: a striped cloth which once was used for a curtain; **carcase**: body; her body which was dead to all animation: **weeds**: garments; now used for widow's garments; **variety**: numerous kinds of; as there were numerous patches of different colors, so also did she suffer from many kinds of distress; **switch**: a little twig, or a broomstick, usually held in the hand by witches to use their art.

Page 59.

Figure of a cross: one that falls down with two hands on earth would draw a figure, by such a fall, resembling a cross. This was taken by the superstitious villagers, as a cross the holiness of which, would not allow the witch being the agent of Satan, to proceed further, and hence the witch stumbling at the sight of the cross; that is the effect was conveniently put for the cause. **Amen**: Hebrew word meaning 'let it be so'; this is said at the end of a 'prayer,' when the poor man because of her extreme old age, and the lapse of memory, said 'Amen' in wrong places. She was accused of saying the prayer backwards, which is the doing of a devil. **Ring**: speak loudly; **palmed**: falsely ascribed; **at the bottom of the churn**: responsible for the turning rod not producing the butter: **a horse sweats............back**: as witches were believed to have taken the horses in the midnight, and ridden them to a point of sweating. **broom-staff**: note the humour here, an ordinary article for sweeping to be found in all houses, here connected with the implements of a witch ; **a tabby cat**: cats are associated with witches ; a cat with a skin of many coloured lines, like the tabby or a silk thread of many colours.

Page 60.

Secretly concerned: painfully affected ; **could not .... smiling**: could resist my laughter to see Sir Roger as a magistrate exercising his authority on the poor old woman asking her not to have anything to do with spirits or ghosts ; for so superstitious was the knight too ; **a bounty**: a money present. **spit pins** : of course the children never spat pins, though the poor witches were charged with the crime of being made to swallow them ; **the night mare** ; is the oppressive feeling felt on the chest ; thought brought about by people drawing the rug on their face without enough air to breathe, this oppressiveness is attributed to a devil setting tight on the chest. **tossing her on the pond** : give her a ducking to see as a witch she could not swim to the bank ; **staggered**: mind being shaken (because of the reports against her) **chaplain** : shows what a fine clergyman he was, free from superstitions, and possessed of a good deal of common sense. **scarce a village**: the Spectator, as usual, courses to the constructive and the reflective part of the essay. He shows how this superstition is a common feature of all the villages, and poor old women, who should be pitied and taken care of, are condemned as witches and put to all manner of cruel treatment. **doat and chargeable to a parish** : doat=dote=weakness of the brain brought about by old age, it is the law in England poor old people unable to support themselves should be supported by the village funds set apart for the purpose. **extravagant fancies** : ideas for which there are proper reasons ;

imaginary distempers: diseases which do not really exist: **frighted at herself**: feels afraid what would become of her; or begins to believe that she may be the real cause. **Secret commerces**: Secret connections or doings. **imagination forms in a delirious old age**: in her old age, when her mind begins to wander, her own imaginations, plays her tricks, and makes her admit charges of accusation of which really she is wholly innocent. **This frequently cuts off** etc: This often make people not to be charitable to those who deserve it, and on the other hand be evilly inclined to these poor old women, who look strange because of weakness and old age. **Decrepit**: weak by old age.

XV.

STEELE.] **[No. 118.**

"The fatal dart
Sticks in his side, and rankles in his heart."

Page 61.

In this essay are given certain doings of Sir Roger because of his disappointed love to the beautiful young widow. **Struck out**: planned out. **hardly ever be**: never be. **labyrinth**: a passage in the garden which leads on endlessly; **transport**: extreme joy. **yet..............tranquillity**: though moved by great joy, yet the joy is self contained and peaceful. **ravished**: delighted; **prospects**: view. **resolution...........them**: she would neither say she is against marriage, nor would she tell her lovers they have no chance with her. **their addresses**: their paying attention to her as lovers. **conscious of her own merit** etc: knowing very well because of a peculiar charm in her that disappointed lovers would not grow wild with her or treat her insultingly.

A man............attention : a man who is carried away by too much of love, is not expected to note the small points of everyday life. **my heart............esteem** : because of my position in life or the respect I have for the widow. I cannot give free vent to my passions. **to worship than salute her** : her charms are so high an order, I am driven to worship her beauty than take liberties such as kissing (salute) her.

Page 62

Giving her the pain etc : though I am desirous of being serviceable to her, I do not desire to pain her mind that she was even obliged to me. **she would have etc** : Sir Roger lulls himself into the blissful conviction the perverse widow would have shown some proofs of love to him had it not been for the woman who is near her. **calling me by name** : assuming an air of familiarity. **confidant** : Sir Roger begins to rave about the women who surround their mistresses, and would not allow lovers to come close to them : These confidants assume an importance as if they themselves are as great as their mistresses. A common experience one has with the *dalayets* of big officers. **In their custody** : note the humour here, practically the mistresses are under the complete control of their confidants as if they were their prisoners. **fortune** : lady of wealth : **surprises** : being surprised by an unworthy lover who wins away her heart ; **least indifferent thing** : a thing so useless as not to be cared for : **ward** ; the maiden under one's care or guard ; **air of distance** : keep the lover at a distance ; **the suspicious behaviour etc** : looks upon the lover with suspicion that he has not come for the sake of love, but with a view to possess the fortune of the heiress. **all intents**

and purposes: for all practical purposes; **married**: the humour is without being married to a man who loves the beautiful maiden or the rich lady: the lady is married to her own confidential woman. **under the conduct of the whisperer**: under the guidance of the confidant who whispers into her ears about the lovers. **of all men in general**: generally about men in general. **you............confidant**: there is hardly a lady whose fate does not depend on these confidants. **only by proxy**: the humour is all the love one has to a lady, must be expressed to her confidant; **harangue**: address; **importunately**: urgently; appealingly.

Page 63.

Personated sullenness: ill-temper not real but assumed or the very picture of anger. **master of the game**: one who is in charge of the hunting arrangements.

Note, the address delivered by the huntsman to the shadow of the angry lady he loved, seen in the stream. **Betty**: a shortened form of Elizabeth; **pleases to be gone**: when she goes away from here; **thou**: shadow or reflection; **make away with**: put an end to my existence. The dots indicate the agitated mind of the disappointed lover. **no sooner.....but**: no sooner..............than. **No, No etc**: I know you won't drop in to the stream and get drowned before you have bid farewell to the other woman whom you love by name Susan Holiday. **Kate Willow**: Catharine Willow, who spreads scandals about others. Spiteful jealous: makes=manufactures or concocts.

Page 64.

To hear me to talk to herself for your sake: wants me to carry my love affairs through her: This shows how confidants like Kate Willow would not allow girls like

Betty to carry her their love affairs directly. **honest :** good and pure. **dare not be otherwise** : will not allow him to trifle with her love ; show love and betray her afterwards. **witty** : clever. **who was a beauty** : once good looking, but now, owing to her mischievous ways, the beauty is gone. **flippant** : speak without thought or knowledge. **honest :** good intentioned. **are ceased** : have disappeared. Saucy= impertinent. **hussy** : shortened form of **house wife,** but with a bad meaning, a mischievous woman. **however** etc : poor Sir Roger begins to speak with feelings how his disappointment in love has created in him some excellent points of character for all its eccentricity. **Streaked.........softness** : my blood being tinged with gentleness. **relent** : take pity. **are grown** : have become a part. **arrived at** : possessed.

Page 65.

Serious discourse : the poor knight himself admits how he cuts an odd and laughable figure on occasions when he is otherwise serious. **I warrant** etc : I assure you she does not do common place work as examining the place where milking takes place, but cultivates learned habits. **galss hive** : where honey bees deposit the honey. **policies of commonwealth** : the honey bees and their ways compared always to an ideal government ; the principles of government. **I would give** etc : she knows how to carry on successfully a debate even with such a whig as Sir Andrew Freeport.

XVI.

ADDISON.] **[No. 119.**

“ The city men call Rome, unskilful swain
I thought looked liked this our simple town”
27—28

Obvious reflections : thoughts that naturally suggest themselves ; **different manners** : how differently they conduct themselves ; **article** : necessary particular ; **deferences** : forms of politeness. **condescensions** : acts of yielding to respect others opinions. **courts and cities** : from these are derived adjectives courtly and civil. **rustic** : relating to the village, hence we speak of an unmannerly man as **boorish** ; compare the terms ನಾಗರೀಕ and ಹಳ್ಳಿಗಮಾರ್. **mutual complaisance** : one yielding to the opinion of the other. **grew troublesome** : for too much of the observance of formalities puts a check on natural methods of acting; hence the trouble. **modish** : fashionable. **constraint** : restriction or force. **conversation** : social affairs. **Romish religion** : the religion of the Roman Catholics, which is too full of rituals and ceremonies like the Hindu religion ; protestantism has a simpler form of worship. **encumbered** : burdened.

Page 66

Retrench its superfluities : cut down what is unnecessary. **unconstrained carriage** : not of an artificial or enforced manner of acting, but simple and straightforward. **our manners** etc : are not as unpleasant as tight fitting garments, but as convenient as clothes which have a loose fit. **nothing** etc : what appears to be no fashion to others is the best fashion of the present day people of culture. **the manners of the last age** etc : what has been given up as no fashion in towns long ago, has been adopted in the country parts as the height of fashion. **fetched themselves** : brought up themselves to the level. **polite** : polished or fashionable. **polis** : is a Greek word meaning a city, hence polite means city or civil manners. **dropped** : gave up : **nearer to the first stage of nature** : more like the manner of people who lived in times before arts of civilization were known. **reigned :** prevailed. **never conversed** : never was experienced or taught. **place and precedency** : the rank and the position one should hold. to do=ado=fuss or trouble. **men of my temper** : the Spectator as a man of robust common sense never bothered himself with these artificialities of the world of society. **adjust the ceremonial** : adapted themselves to the position to which each was entitled ; precisely what we see in formal Hindu dinner parties. **pick and cull** : choose and separate. **uninfected with ceremony** : not corrupted by a strict adherence to formalities.

Page 67.

Fishing all the morning : an occupation that would make him hungry. **they had no manners in the country** : and hence he would not get over the gate, before I had done so. These show even in small particulars the country people adopt cumbrous manners given up as troublesome, long ago by townsmen.

There has happened etc : the whole paragraph relates to the dreariness of conversation in village parts. A round about and not a direct language is chosen by the country gentry to express ideas which require a certain amount of delicacy, that it makes conversation stiff. On the otherhand city people, who have learnt their manners from the French, a country which is regarded as the source of all polished manners, are most brutally direct that even a fool or a poor would be ashamed to hear even. Here Addison has a hit **not against country gentry,** but against the so called well mannered townsmen. **Infamous** : shameful. **Coxcomb** : a well dressed fashionable fellow (ಜಂಬದಕೋಳಿ).

Same word as Cock's comb; a cock who prides on its bright comb-like feather on the head. **profession of religion**: admit to be religious; **will be left in the lurch**: will be in a false position being left to themselves, as sometime after as in the case of other kinds of change in manners, the towns people, ashamed of their coarse language will give up talking in such a language. **too late**: so late that it would be of no good to them.

Page 68.

Parcel of lewd clowns: used contemptuously for a pack of illiterate idiots. **beaux**: well dressed fashionable person. **Revolution**: Early Stuart period, when the country rose against Charles the 1st and fought the Civil War 1640-1660. **outvie**: to show off better. **western circuit**: engaged in legal affairs and moves with the court which has jurisdiction over the western part of England.

XVII.

ADDISON.] **[No 120.**

"I believe they are inspired by a divine sagacity."

This motto means God's ways are to be seen in all creatures, whether big or small; beasts and birds which are limited in their capacity to express their desire, have some power put in them by God, by which as surely, or even better than men they satisfy their necessities.

Fowl: used in a general sense as indicating all that belong to that species. **speculations of nature**: reflections on objects of nature in their working and habits. **lain**=past participle of the verb **lie**; **has lain** is concerned with. **cannot forbear**: is compelled to.

Page 69.

Falls : comes. **arguments for Providence** : proofs to the existence of God. **demonstrative** : final or conclusive. **more proper** : more suited. **Lust** : sexual pleasure and **propagate** : increase. **nicer frame** : delicate build of body. **beds** : resting places.

Addison proves it is not by imitation that birds and beasts do certain peculiar things. **to the laying of a stick**; even to so minute point of placing a stick in a particular manner in the nest. Then he shows it is not by **reason** : they do so. **endued** : endowed or gifted.

Page 70.

From animals, Addison proceeds to prove the existence of God by speaking about the weather. **genial warmth** : as much heat in the body as is necessary for hatching eggs etc. **while it lasts** : animals bestow all care on their young ones only so long it is necessary to protect them from harm, when they could not take care of themselves. **Violence** : extreme or over great. **natural** : untaught or self born. **barbarous** : cruel. **exquisite** : extreme ; unlike man, the animal withdraws its love from the young one when it could look after its own interests.

Page 71.

Ascend from the young to the parent : again another distinction between animals and men. Human beings show love to their parents, but as such a love is not necessary for the grown up animal or bird, the young does not return the love it receives from its parent. **nor indeed ....received** : At a certain stage human beings are no better than animals and birds. Because care is bestowed to bring up the young ones, affection also follows, but because the young has received care and safety for its existence, it does not in most families of human beings, show affection or gratitude to those who bestowed that care on it. **Sceptical men disputing** etc. there are some men who will not admit the fact that animals are not bestowed with reason like men. Sceptic because they do not believe in the truth of the statement animals are differentiated from men from their having no reasoning faculty. Animals **seem** to be possessed of reason only in two things, (i) increase of their number, (ii) extreme care to bring up young ones. **in their generation** : in their own way. **narrow compass:** very limited extent. **take** : deprive. **cover** : brood, or spread its wings over the egg and give it sufficient warmth for hatching.

Page 72.

Vital warmth : heat necessary to give life. **leaves them** : so as to secure or obtain. **greater freedom** : because the atmospheric heat helps the hatching. **principles of life** : those elements in the body to enable it to live. **nicety :** carefulness. **not to take notice of :** besides or in addition to. **chymical** or chemical, used in its larger sense of any experiment of skill.

Now Addison considers the other side of the question how the hen so careful of the hatching and taking care of the chicken, is found wanting in certain essential particulars, where man, because of his powers of reason, and not of instinct, shows himself to be its superior. **glimmerings** : rays. **of never so different** : a very different ; now in the place of **never** we would use **ever**. **in all these circum-**

stances : in particulars on which the existence of herself or the young one does not depend.

Page 73.

Rises above reason : instinct being more unfailing, whereas reason may fail. **any properties in matter** : anything natural to the particular manner in which the animal has been created. **upon the principle** etc : just as objects are attracted to the earth by a mysterious force in them called gravitation, so also there is some power in the animals called instinct given by God that makes them to do certain things unerringly. **first mover** : God.

XVIII.

ADDISON.] **[No. 121.**

"God manifests in all things."

Addison continues the same matter, and shows further how God shows himself in these several creatures below man by gifting them with powers to make life possible for them. **step-mother :** not the actual mother, but the hen that hatched the duck's eggs. **hovered :** as the hen does not take to water, kept itself agitating about the brink of the water. **the different principle** : ducks taking to water, and the hen avoiding it. **direct of Providence :** will of God. **determines** etc : makes matter to act according to its nature or position. **Bayle :** a physician and a professor of literature in the University of Toulouse 1647-1707. He wrote a French dictionary in 1695. **dissertation :** essay. **God** etc : means, as in the philosophy of the Hindus, that God directs the working of the least of the creatures. He is the **Antar Atma :** the soul of souls. Besides the Hindus think that even brutes have souls to save.

Page 74.

Seeming Sagacity: which for practical purposes appears as wisdom. **noxious** : bad ; Tully christian name of Cicero, the great Roman Orator of the 1st century A.D. **teat** : of the beast from which milk is sucked. **Dampier** : 1652-1715, author of **A Voyage round the World** : and a great navigator. **fall on** : begin to eat. **the lower parts of our nature** : passions which degrade man to the level of beasts. **birds of prey** : birds which make living beings as their food. **tractable** : tame. **passions** etc : the nature of the animal is as according to the build of its body. **exquisite** : extreme or great.

Page 75.

Fortified : helped with or strengthened. **proboscis** : trunk like that of an elephant. Locke, John, 1632-1704, the author of **Essay on Human Understanding** ; a great philosopher who was responsible for the enunciation of the theory of contract as between subjects and sovereigns. **in that state** etc : even if it had, it would not be the better in position, unable as it is to shift from one place to another. **afflux** : flowing towards. More, Henry, 1614-1687, one of the original members of the Royal Society and author of Divine Dialogues. **Cardan** : an Italian philosopher. Mathematician, and Doctor, 1501-1575.

Page 76.

Mole : an insectivorous animal which burrows under the surface of the ground, throwing up the soil into little mounds or hills. c.f. the well-known expression to make a mountain of a mole-hill, **palpable** : plain, clear. **obscurely** : dimly. **but for amends** : to make good. **kindred**: species or class. **train** : tail, anything that drags behind.

fetch her out : pulled her by the tail out. Boyle, Robert, 1626-1691, founder of the Royal Society. **humour** : quality or power possessed by the layer of watery matter.

Page 77.

Even in the blemishes etc : the existence of God is proved in the very defects of these creatures, for such defects are defects only from the standpoint of men, but are virtues or powers to the preservation of these animals. **observations** : experiments and experiences. **Education** : how trained or brought up. **policies** : principles of their life. **short and defective** : very brief and wanting, as it would take centuries to exhaust an examination of God's creation, in lands and seas. **howling wilderness and the great deep** : expression taken from the Bible.

Page 78.

Finest glasess : highest magnifying power. **conclusions of the rest** : by drawing valid inferences. **raised** : elevated. **metaphors** : figurative language. **lifts the subject** : gives a dignity to the subject. **raillery** : light talk ; nice=very acute. **ordinary** : not gifted with genius.

XIX.

ADDISON.] **[No. 122.**

A good companion on the road is as good as a
conveyance.

The peculiarites of Sir Roger as a Judge are humorously described here.

To avoid etc : do nothing which is opposed to his conscience. **censures** : bad opinion ; conscience is more important than even risking a bad opinion. **to see those approbations** etc : nothing should be more pleasing to a man than the combination of his good conscience and the good opinion of the public. **warranted :** guaranteed or approved. **at peace with himself** : because of the purity of his heart. **tribute** : reward of good will of the people.

Page 79.

Country assizes : sessions of the court periodically held in certain selected country parts. **plain men** : men with nothing that is striking about them; human etc : a man with an income of £100 a year. **within the game act** : to take advantage of the game Act, as his income does not fall short of the minimum of £100 a year. **knocks down a dinner** : to serve for his dinner the bird or the game that he kills : **shoots flying** : is capable of killing a bird even when it is on its wings. **foreman of the petty Jury :** the chief man of the Jury formed to try petty cases ; the grand Jury, is that body of people who before the trial commences give their opinion whether a case is worth trying or not.

Tom Touchy : the very word **touchy** is indicative of the fact a fellow who easily takes offence. **taking the law** : going to law. **go to law with the widow** : both humorous and pathetic, because of the attachment of the knight to this woman, for all the disappointment he suffered at her hands. **His head :** keeps always thinking about. **damages**: fines to be paid. **ejectments** : how to throw out of his possession. **plagued** : troubled **till he was.........prosecution** : this is a hit against people who spend more on a case than what the thing is worth ; a practice which operates as a curse in southern India ; for a banyan or other tree worth rupees two, people to establish their rights would spend as many thousands of rupees, only to be completely ruined. **four score pounds** : income of eighty pounds. **cast and**

has been cast: filed suits and counter suits have been filed against him. **Willow-tree**: which has been the subject matter of the suit for a long time. **Stopped short :** waited.

Page 80.

Hole : a technical term for a hollow place where much fish could be found. **round trot**: is not trotting round, but at full trot. **round**: complete. **much might be said on both sides :** though Sir Roger knew the nature of Tom Touchy and could have given his opinion against him, such was his magnanimity not to wound anyone's feelings, he gives judgment, not displeasing to either party. **was sat**: had already assembled. **they made room :** shows their regard to Sir Roger. **reputation in the country**: so as to make the country people to think high of him because of his intimacy with the **Judge**= presiding judge. **Sir Roger getting up to speak :** an eccentric trait of Sir Roger ; the same as his getting up in the church when the service is going on. **much business and great intrepidity**: with a show of great importance and quickness of understanding. **was up :** was on his legs to speak ; the country people had a great estimation of his powers by his doing so.

Page 81.

To give him a figure: to give an importance. **at a distance** : because of their respectful regard to him. **verge**: boundary. **sign post :** in all inns to distinguish one from the other, a sign post would be fixed on which something or other would be painted, and the inn would take the name of what is painted. As ,the retainer, who was started in life with some capital to be in a position to become the proprietor of an inn wanted to show his gratitude, he had the knights head painted on the sign post board ; though the intentions were excellent, yet the manner of fulfilling them was very ugly, as it would suggest, that for an act of treason, Sir Roger's head was cut off ! made him=paid him.

Too great an honour: there is a hidden meaning here, besides the plain meaning ; he being an insignificant person, as compared with a duke, the highest honor next to the Sovereign in the land, he could commit no act of treachery for his head to be cut off and made to hang before the inn. **at the charge** : pay for. **aggravation** : increase beyond proper proportions. **Saracens**: the Turks who gave trouble to the Christian pilgrims in Palestine. A class of people who were painted dreadfully by their inimical Christians. **honour's head brought back** : again the grim humour is kept on. **discovering** : displaying. **discover** : see or find out. **conjuring me** : asking me in all seriousness. **composed** : regained the usualness of manner. **that much might be** : paying Sir Roger is his own coin, repeating his own expression, that the painted head was and was not like his own head.

XX.

ADDISON.] **[No. 123.**

"Yet the best blood by learning is refined
And virtue arms the solid mind
Whilst vice will stain the noble race
And the original stamp deface."

Here, Addison describes the position of the county Squires, who born to an estate, petted by their mothers, are bred to a life of ease and luxury, which in the long run spoils them, and the dignity of the family suffers, whereas good training does in calculable good, whether it be man or woman, and contributes to no mean degree to the happiness of the lives of the young and the delight of their parents.

Page 83.

Let loose : to wander as he chose. **that if it were ....county** : judged by the point of health, he is a perfect gentleman, and by other more important standards testifying to aman being a gentleman or not, he is an absolute zero. **elder brothers** : as these are the only **members** of a family entitled to succeed to the ancestral property. **reflecting** : thinking too much of their importance conferred on them by birth ; **from the same foolish** etc : or because those that should take good care to train their minds, telling them instead of the greatness of their position. **to keep up their families** : they would have justified their existence if they give birth to children to succeed them. **at large** : completely. **feigned** : pretended ; for real names will disclose their identity. **novel** : new, not founded on fact.

Page 84.

Study-conversation-travel : the three excellent ways of acquiring valuable knowledge. **sciences** : sources of knowledge. **the interests of the Princes** : what special interest each prince had: **scarce meet.........whom he had not** : knew of every great man whose name was published in the Gazette or news paper. **mixt and digested** : metaphor taken from food ; not only did he obtain knowledge, but made it exceedingly useful. **acceptable to the principal men** : in those days of absence of news papers, telegrams, etc., valuable information obtained from all over the world was very welcome. **turned of** : passed over ; the full quotation from Cowley is " there is no fooling with life when it once turned beyond forty " **dallying** : fooling with. **pursuant** : agreeable to. **wrapt up :** bound.

Page 85.

In his own house : because as the child had no mother to attend to its wants. **ordinary behaviour** : as it obtains in the world, where wealthy youngmen are proud of their position and neglect to obtain knowledge. **advantageously** : mothers being too proud of their only children, naturally would not like them to be brought up under poorer people, who can ill afford to give them conveniences suitable to their high estate. **wrought** ; habituated or worked. **to make his way** : to earn a living. **assisted by the directions** : trained under.

Page 86

Exercises : mental training and physical culture. **applause** : praise. **inns of court** : law colleges. **where ....estates** : where it is generally the case sons of wealthy people make no great progress in their law studies, as they know without them they could get on very well. **without intermission** : without slackening insight=deep knowledge. **foster-father** : the father who brought him up. **trained up............uneasy passion** : As he was an young man who had been brought up on very good principles, he could not think of bad ways of obtaining his object of love. **indirect** : wrong. **greatest fury** : for the passion does not work its way out as in bad people, but secretly torments the man who is bound by rules of good conduct :

Page 87.

Closet : small room where confidential talk is possible.

filial piety : love of a child to her parents. **relish of** : the full pleasure of it. **profusion** : abundance or fullness. **dumb show** : standing without uttering even a syllable. **just recompense** : reward due.

XXI.

ADDISON.] **[No. 124.**

" A geat brook is a great evil "

Loose tracts : in separate pieces of paper coming on and off ; **preamble** : introduction ; **rests and nodding places** : writings which are slipshod. **piece-meal** : given bit by bit ; **lie close** : must be closely knit or joined ; **wholly new............expressions** : either the matter be new or the style excellent ; **flat** : dull ; **beaten** : familiar or dealt with before ; **in the lump** : these defects disappear when the whole book is taken together. **tautologies** : needless repetitions ; **longer labours** : bigger books.

Page 89.

Galenic way : after the Greek physician Galen 131-201, A.D. **Chemical method** : concentrated stuff as for example tinctures and other chemical combinations. **quintessence** : fifth essence ; that is the best essence ; **a folio** : is printing of a big volume with pages as long full sheets ; **zealots** : people who ardently take up one side against another ; **unbend** : relax or give recreation. **retirements** : in secluded places ; far from the reach of common people ; **obtruded** : thrust upon. **canvassed** : good opinions obtained for it.

Page 90.

Proverbs : portion of Old Testament ; **rural speculations** : thoughts suggested by my stay in the country ;

motified : disappointed. **heaviness and ignorance** : dullness and want of culture ; **oculists** : eye doctors ; **moles through envy** : shut their eyes out of jealousy.

Page 91.

Wolf : enemy to tear another to pieces ; **spots** : defects. **dark undermining vermin** : despicable creatures like moles who work secretly.

XXII.

ADDISON.] **[No. 125.**

"This thirst of kindred blood, my sons, detest
Nor turn your face against your country's breast."

This essay is very opportune to the present condition of aflairs in India ; where one class fights against another ; and one caste deems itself as the enemy of another.

Addison, though himself a whig politician, takes an impartial and just view of things, and feels horrified to see the damages caused to the interest of the country by the fights waged by the Tories against the whigs ; the protestants against the catholics ; the puritans against the high church party and vice-versa. He gives some constructive proposal how these party conflicts could be put an end to, and the peace of the country promoted. Though Addison was a whig he does not grudge to elevate to the position of a worthy hero, the Tory, Sir Roger De Coverley.

Roundheads ; a term applied during the Civil Wars 1640-1660 to the soldiers of the parliamentary army, as they cropped their hair close to their ear. These were mostly poor people drawn from all ranks. They were rigid protestants or puritans, and admitted no elaborate ceremonials in the church and did not worship saints as in the High church. **cavaliers** : those who could afford to keep a horse in war ; were the partisans of the king ; called also Royalists ; men who were generally drawn from the wealthy and aristocratic classes ; High Church or Catholic in religion ; paid reverence to Saints.

Stripling : youth. **person** : here one who was an extreme protestant. **Popish Cur** : a dog who belonged to the catholic faith of which the Pope in Rome is the head ; **Anne's Lane** : the boy dropped the word Saint, as it proved offensive, but unfortunately the man to whom he put the question, happened to be one of a High Church. **a prick ear'd cur** : a round head dog ; **ingenious artifice** : clever manner.

Page 92.

Spoil good neighbourhood : make neighbours fighting against each other ; **honest** : in other ways honest ; **manifestly** : surely. **prejudice of the land tax** : Sir Roger as a gentleman of vast landed estates in the country naturally feels for the heavy taxes imposed by the whig ministers who are usually gentlemen, not drawn from the landed aristocracy, but from trading and other classes. **destruction of the game** : laws lenient to the poachers, and hence doing harm to the recreations of Tory landed proprietors who hugely take to fox hunting etc. **judgment** : punishment by God : **rends** : tears ; **distinct** : as if entirely different ; **averse** : hateful ; **pernicious to the last degree** : bad beyond mending ; **common enemy** : like the French and others who were opposed to the English ; **private evils** : evils not political, but moral ; **sinks** : degrades : **civil wars** : people of the same country fighting against each other: **restraints**: control. **breaks out** : shows itself ; **detraction** : slander. **calumny** : false charge ; **partial** : one sided not just ; **spleen and rancour** : angry hatred ; **extinguishes** : destroys ; **seeds** : sources. **Plutarch** : famous Greek biographer of the first christian era.

Page 93.

Which............object : this hatred against another is not because that the other is bad, but because that one has made his mind to be fouled by the passion : **answers** : corresponds ; **to that great rule** : laid down by Christ, in **Luke** VI, 27-37 which commences with the noble words " Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you : bless them that curse you "............................ and ends with " Judge not, and Ye shall not be judged ; condemn not, and Ye shall not be condemned ; forgive, and Ye shall be forgiven ". **real grief of heart** : like Mahatma Gandhi note how sincerely this great moralist Addison feels.

Soured : corrupted ; **alienated** : estranged or becoming inimical ; **either of reason or religion** : neither common sense nor religious feeling would allow it ; **zeal** : earnestness carried too far. **the regard..............them** : an interest in their own private affairs would have made them to behave so badly. **judgments** : act of judging ; **insipid** : tasteless or having no merit ; **cried up** : praised loudly ; **different principle** : different party or view in politics ; **actuated** : stirred ; **a man of merit** etc : just as a straight stick when put in water by the refraction of the rays looks as if it were bent, so also even a good man because of his difference of views, becomes crooked in judgment ; **figure** : importance ; **two contrary characters** : in his private life perfect, but as a politician having unjust or narrow views regarding those to whom he is opposed ;

opposite : opposed ; **knowledge and learning** : this party politics have invaded even the sacred domains of literature.

Page 94.

Abusive scurrilouse style : party pamphlets written in a most offensive language ; **satire** : as if it possesses that art in literature, where a thing is represented in inoffensive language other than what it is ; **dull scheme of party notions** : the ideas of a particular political party explained in a most uninteresting manner.

Sophistry : apparently true, but really false ; here the sophistry is to argue as if it were true that a man is bad, when really he is not ; **refuted** : proved to be wrong. **ordinary postulatums** : as a matter of course assumed to be true. **first principles** : basic truths ; truths on which everything else depends ; **foundations of scurrility** : abuse on which they base everything ; **superstructure :** just as when the foundation is weak, the building raised on it must totter so also when these scandal mongers proceed upon abuse all that they say must be untrue. Lie has no legs ; one lie is supported by the other ; **endures** : continues as a permanent feature ; **praise** etc : people will not do good things to secure praise, and will not be afraid of the consequences of doing bad things for everything ends in blame ; **inhuman.** opposed to the best instincts of humanity ; **Guelfs and Ghibellines** : those that belonged to the party of the Pope and the king respectively ; originally these were the war cries of the two parties. **The League** : the Catholic League formed by the Duke of Guise to support the supremacy of the French Catholics against the minority community of French Protestants or Huguenots. **Stormy and**

tempestuous season: troubled and anxious days; **artful** cunning; **specious**: false; **probity**: truthfulness; **seduced**: tempted; **noblest of principles**: patriotism.

Page 95.

Here Addison gives an excellent plan by which this kind of shameful misunderstanding between the people of a country could be put an end to. He is for weeding out such bad people who bring about strife under the guise of patriotism; **neutral**: not joining this side or that; impartial; **shelter distressed innocence**: give support to innocent people unjustly injured; **beset**: troubled: **Whigs and Tories**: first these political terms were nick names applied in a contemptuous manner by one party against the other; the corresponding terms in Politics now are Liberals and Conservatives.

XXIII.

ADDISON.] **[No 126.**

" Rutulians and Trajans are the same to me "

Confusion: defeat or destruction: equity: justice; **divest**: give up: **heats**: anger; **prepossessions**: prejudice; **cleave**: adhere: stick to.

Page 96.

Two and two make four: fact is a fact, and we will not pervert it; **persuade us**: prevails upon us to convert to his opinion; **with the hazard**: at the risk; **six is less than seven**: a small man can never be painted great; **regard to places**, either may mean risking the high places they enjoy, or irrespective of the high position of the man whom they are prepared to expose; **extirpate**: root out;

furious : blinded by passion and not guided by reason ; **colour** : pretence ; **retainers** : men who for a hire do dirty things to their paymasters ! servants in the ordinary sense ; **implicit** : unquestioning ; **derision** : scorn ; **making room**: creating occasion for the promotion of : **conspicuous** highly important ; **Diodarus Siculus** : a Greek historian of the 1st century B.C., author of **The Historical Library. Ichneumon** : an Egyptian animal feeding on flesh ; **finds his account in them** : to place them to his advantage : **as gods** : because of the service it does to rid the country of the pest of crocodiles ; **disinterested** : because the **Ichneumon** : does not itself eat the eggs, it kills, but helps the country with their slaughter ; **train of my speculations** : sequence of my thoughts ; **contracts** : acquires : **politer conversation** : polished talk as in towns ; **heads**: leaders ; **bow and the hat** : taking off the hat or bending of the body to show respect to others ; **tools** : agents ; **Whig jockies** : whigs who take interest in races.

Page 98

Tory fox hunters : Tories, in the country side, who delight in fox hunting ; **humour** : particular inclination or tendency; **raillery** : cracking jokes : **diverts** : amuses; **in my ear** : secretly ; **keeping up** : maintaining his prestige amongst other Tory fox hunters ; **bait** : take refreshment, for that would make the Tory Knight to come for blame ; **hard beds and bad cheer** : for having to oblige the Tory inn-keepers they had to content themselves at times when there was no good sleeping accommodation and bad food ; **about the inn** ; whether it could give us good boarding and lodging ; **inn-keeper** : whether he was a Tory or a Whig ; **taleness** : old and not having freshness ; **the better the**

host : happened to be a Tory in politics : **honest** : because he was of the same political party.

Bowling green : the grass plot or lawn on which the game of bowls was played ; **Bowls** : Balls of wood or other material used for rolling on a level surface ; this was usually loaded on one side ; this game his gone practically out of favour ; **A very fair bettor** : one who generously came forward to bet ; **correspondence** : communication : **a fanatic** : a whig because I stared in surprise ; **perpetuates** : continues for ever ; **widens over breaches** : increases more and more our misunderstanding ; **first principles** : initial stages.

XXIV.

ADDISON.] **[No. 127.**

" How empty things are "

This essay ridicules some female fashions in articles of of dress.

Dyer's letter : a tri-weekly newspaper dealing with social life more than with politics. It was called the **news letter.**

Page 100.

Quality : name ; addressed from the Spectator office ; **the country their revenge :** make the country people take revenge on towns people by your ridiculing their ways and manners. **Petticoats** : a low gown : **concave :** bulging vastly : **within no compass :** pass beyond the limit of propriety ; **humour** : the bad fluid (according to the old ideas of physiology) ; **superfluity of ornaments :** excess in adorning themselves ; **contrary etc** : the foundation should be broad or narrow as according to the height of the building being high or low, but here the ladies giving up their long head dress have decreased in height, and to the same degree decrease in bulk, but instead by putting on the barrel like petticoat, unduly put on a bulging or swollen appearance. **Jennet** or **genet**: a small sized but well proportioned spanish horse, or a carnivorous animal belonging to the cat species: They were believed to become pregnant with the wind entering the womb.

Page 101.

Airy: being loose. are comfortable as the wind plays about the body unlike a stiff, close fitting gown; **pretence**: excuse; **moderate**: very bearable; not very warm; **fain**: tempted to; gladly; **saucy**: mischievous: **at a distance**: because of the fear of their hugely grown body, or that the gown would act as a weapon of defence.

The metaphor is taken from a fortification which has one line of wall within another, and thus the enemy before he comes at the party taking refuge in the fortification should have to enter a series of entrances, guarding each inner line of fortification (circumvallation): So also a lady of a large gown, will have layer and layer of inner linings to that gown; and before one could get at her heart one should tear through a number of linings.

whale bone: an elastic horny substance which adheres in thin parallel plates, and so also the inner lining of the gown here; **ill-bred fellow**: for no man of good manners would assault the modesty of a lady; **Sir George Etherage**: a popular writer of low comedies highly notorious in character; author of **The Man of Mode**: 1636-1694.

Hoops : A combination of circles of either whale bone or other elastic material used to expand the skirts of ladies' dresses ; also called a farthingale : **Prodigy** : Something extraordinary from which particularly bad omens are drawn ; **the ruin of the Spanish monarch** : in 1558, during the reign of queen Elizabeth, when the Spanish Armada had a crushing defeat in English waters ; **Prognostication :** a evil omen ; **tail of a blazing star** : tail of a shining comet bespeaking evil to come as for example the death of Emperor Edward the VII being attributed to Haileys' Comet ; **multitudes**............it ; more people are going to be born than to die.

She was so near her time : was coming of age.

Page 102.

As far gone ! She was not young, though she was dressed in a fashionable manner. It is..................world : This is a trick played by some old ladies to hide their age, so that they might be taken as young for people to woo. **Wary :** cautious or careful ; **strutting :** projecting, also the petticoat which makes a lady to strut like a peacock ; **levels** : equalises the old woman with the young ; **bottom** : basis or level ; **bloated** : look swollen : **waddling** : clumsily moving about, **room** : space to walk ; **congregations :** church goers ; **Straitened :** narrowed for space ; **encrease** : increase ; **meetings and conventicles** : places of worship frequented by **extreme** Protestants or Dissenters ; **trunk-breeches** : trousers bloated and full, reaching to the knee ; **pew** seat in a church ; **repository** : resting place or store room ; **generations**..............**us** : our descendants many years after to come ; **posterity :** descendants.

Page 103.

That............amiable : they made themselves to look so monstrous in their estimations, though in the great grandmother's time the dress was intended to make the ladies work beautiful or fashionable. **Rotonda** ; a dome ; here the hooped petticoat ; **unhoop** : to make the ladies give up the hooped petticoat, and also to expose ; **tympany** : anything inflated : bombastic ; **sensitive plant** : mimosa pudica, or the plant which shrinks at a touch **portentous novelty** : this evil bringing new fashion.

XXV.

ADDISON.] **[No. 128.**

Page 103.

Harmonious discord.

Their fibres : build of body ; **animal spirits** : liveliness ; **volatile** : lively, brisk ; **sex in the very soul** : as if the female soul is different from the male soul, though there is no difference of caste, color, creed or sex in the soul; **vivacity** : liveliness ; **gravity** : seriousness ; **bias** : inclination or tendency.

Page 104.

That it may............reason : so that each does not carry its peculiar nature to an unreasonable extreme ; **one** : the women ; the **other** : men ; **airy** : thoughtless or light. **Savage philosophy** : cruel view of life or too strict a view ; **thoughtless gallantry** : accent on gallantry is **not** on the first but **on** the 2nd syllable : light hearted manner of life of fashion ; **cynic** : one who takes a narrow and contemptuous view of life : **impertinent and fantastical** : irrelevant, impudent and whimsical ; **counterpart** :

one fulfilling the part wanting in another ; **sprightliness** : cheerfulness ; **tempered** : adjusted or moulded **trimmed** : put in sailing order ; **Ballasts** : weight to steady a ship on the waters. **Contract** : agreement : **blandishment** : attractive charms.

Page 105.

Assiduous : industrious or unfailing ; reciprocal; at times the husband and wife exchanging their duties ; **incumbent** : devolving ; **If we observe** etc : unfortunate it is that women do not choose for their husbands men who will by their seriousness moderate their light heartedness, but instead have for their partners in life silly minded men like themselves. **Coxcomb** : a fashionable but brainless fellow ; **insipid** : meaningless : **as they** : which the women ; **self-love diverted** : her own ways of life dear to her directed to another who possesses them: **a woman.........sex** : lover is one who has all womanly weaknesses, except for his being a man : **loves itself in man** : loves only such a man who has all her weaknesses; **joins** : unites in marriage **dissipate** : spend away uselessly ; **inflame** : increase ; **aggravate** : increase.

Page 106.

Levity ; thoughtlessness : **tractable** : one who could be drawn to their ways ; **irregular vivacity of temper**: this liveliness of mind which does no good ; **sublime perfections............mother** ; mothers who are fond of fashions train the children to adopt their ways pleasing to their eyes. **perpetuate herself in a worthless progeny** : continues in her children her ways which make them useless ; **Faustina** : the ignoble wife of the noble philosophic Roman Emperor Marcus Aurelius; **gladiator**: a prize fighter: **abandoned**; wicked; **signalizing**: prominently showing; **Hercules**: the great Greek mythical hero of many wonderful doings; **lion's skin**: Hercules killed the great Nemean lion, and wore its skin; even now we see wrestlers covering their chest with tiger or leopard's skins; coquet; indulging in love talk, to gain admirers.

Page 107

Hankering: eagerly desiring; **overrun**: too full of; **brutality**: coarseness: **purling**: making a murmuring noise; **rails**: scolds; **essenced fops**: fashionable young men with sweet scented clothes; **tawdry**: contraction of **St. Audrey**; a fair in the name of the Saint where cheap fineries were sold, and hence, showiness without taste or elegance; **Romances**: here love stories: **clown**: uncivilized villager; **no better than she should be**: other than what a modest woman is expected to be.

Aristus: Greek word meaning the best: here the great Greek Statesman Pericles, whose period the 5th century B.C. was the most glorious in Athenian history. **Aspasia**: the kept lady of Pericles; the **one**: Aspasia: **cheerful gravity**: though serious in talk yet cheerful in manner; **complacency**: affability.

XXVI.

ADDISON.] [**No. 129.**

"Thou, like the hind most chariot, wheels are curst
Still to be near, but ne'er to be the first"

The Spectator's observations on the absurdity of the peculiarities in dress are continued.

Periwig: a small wig or covering for the head.

Page 108

In the text for the word; **poet**: read; **posterity**: **odd figure**: ugly and out of fashion.

Everlasting drapery: dress which is found acceptable at all times; **innovations**; new changes; **in a gallery of old family pictures**: in which are to be seen different kinds of dress fashionable in the respective times of one's ancestors; **running after the mode**: eagerly adopting the fashions of the times (liable to change); **the mode would overtake them**: and their dress in the change of the time, like the hands of a clock, must come to be once more fashionable; **I 'ill engage**: I am prepared to assure.

Page 109.

Stain or stains, 10 miles from London; **commode**: a kind of head dress with a wire to keep the hair from falling on the face or out of the cap; **Ramilie Cock**: After the battle of Ramilies in 1706, a kind of cocket hat first worn by the great victor General Marlborough came to be fashionable, taking its name after the English victory; **flounced and furbelowed**: Flounce is a strip of cloth served horizontally round a frock or gown; **furbelow** is a kind of flounce; **wrinkled**: stitched in a contracted manner; **Friezeland hen**: hen whose feathers stand out as frizzles, pointedly ruffled; **muffs**: a cylindrical cover made of furs into which both hands may be thrust to keep them warm; compare muffler; **Retrenching**: cutting; **franked by a parliament man**: sent under the signature written down on the cover of the parcel, to carry it post free, by a member of parliament;

Page 110,

Beau : fashionable young man ; **in buckle** : curted up ; **Lady of the manor** : wife of the big proprietor of the lands in the village ; **unspeakable satisfaction** : exceedingly great delight because people honoring and noticing her for her peculiarity of dress ; **bobwig** : an artificial hair head dress with short curls to imitate natural hair ; Read **unbottomed** : as **unbuttoned ruffle** : an important article of dress for the neck, made of linen plated or crimpled.

The students may note unless by chance somebody carried the recent fashion in London to the remote parts of the country, dress, out of fashion, was much in vogue amongst the country people ; but the nearer the place to London, the fashion becomes of one more and more of those that were but lately given up.

Page 111.

Monmonth Cock : Like Ramilies Cock, a particular method of wearing the hat, after the fashion introduced by the Duke of Monmonth, the illegitimate but extremely fashionable and handsome son of Charles II ; **Red coat** : till the khakhi was introduced in the military, red was the favourite color of the military, and this continued till twenty years ago ; **lay :** took lodgings ; **accoutered :** dressed : **night-caps :** even are small skull caps tied behind ; **Scollop** or **Scallop :** a cock shell taken from the oyster species. originally worn by pilgrims to Palestine. in evidence of their having gone there ; it is cut into segments ; **Cumberland** : because it is far away to the North of England from London ; **steenkirk** : a black silk cravat or neck cloth, worn after the fashions of the generals who took hastily a part in the battle of steenkirk.

XXVII.

ADDISON.] **[No. 130.**

Their sport was hunting and their trade plunder.

In this essay Addison gives a splendid idea of the doing of gypsies, a class of wandering people, eastern in origin, with picturesque peculiarities of dress and speech, much resembling Lambanies in India. They, under the pretence of fortune telling frequent, with their moving camps, villages, and do much pilfering. They take to kidnapping too. Addison warns people against such people.

Gypsies : because they were believed to have come from Egypt ; **exert** : exercise the power of ; **vagrant** : wandering : **clerk** : Addison humorously hints that without the clerk, Sir Roger was not capable to attend to his magisterial duties ; **fearing** : because any step he took against the gypsies would make them to retaliate by stealing his fowls etc.

Page 112.

Spoiling : by putting fanciful ideas or even wicked ideas to become a party to their actions by fore-telling them a bright future ; **ten to one :** every chance of their becoming : **hen-roost** : all the collection of hen with young ones ; **straggle** : wander ; **agog** : **excitement crosses** : puts into or bribes, a technical term which means that nothing could be done unless done so previous to consultation ; **pantry** : place where provisions are kept ; **sweet hearts** catching hold of young people who are in love ; **Jades** : a vile woman ; **slut** : feminine of sloven =lazy woman ; **Cassandra** : daughter of the Trojan King Priam. who was gifted with the power of prophecy, but cursed that none should believe it ; **my**

lines : practising palmistry and examing the lines in my hand; **crumpled** : twisted.

Page 113.

Scanned : examined minutely; **sun burnt**; more exposed to wind and weather, hence old and experienced; **baggage** : a term of contempt for a woman; **smiled** : the poor Knight felt pleased even with this reference; **enquiry** : examination; **that she should dream** : note here Addison's humour how these gypsies pretends to tell of things which could not be verified for if the poor Knight dreamed he would know how could he know whether or what the widow dreamed; **bid her go on** : for evidently he felt tickled and mighty pleased with the doubtful prospect of the widow loving him still; **roguish leer** : mischievous glance, indicating love; **simper** : affected or silly smile! See how the gypsies take advantage of the poor Knight letting himself go; **gibberish** : meaningless chatter; **darkness** : doubtfulness; **jocund** : joyful because of the happy references to his love affairs; **picked** : stolen of the money, of course by the gypsies; **palmistry** : here used for deception, while pretending to practise the sign of palmistry; **vermin:** detestable creatures; **dexterous** : skilful; **profligate** : immoral or wicked; **commonwealth** : having certain rules and regulations of their own, which they respect, as we do the laws of our country.

Page 114.

Moles or marks : marks of identification; **mole** : a spot, dark or brown or a protruberance, strength of constitution etc : physical fitness all these are the outcome of the boy's open air life, and being thrown on his own resources.

Page 115.

Rudiments : beginnings ; **wearing off** : giving up ; **peregrinations** : wanderings.

XXVIII.

ADDISON.] **[No. 131.**

"Once more do I bid adieu to the woods."

Worst comes to the worst : When game could not be had elsewhere. See how a bit cunning Sir Roger is to hunt at others expense. **Harder to come at** : not easy to be had. **Where it does** etc : in a place where the quarry is easy to be had, game gives no pleasure. **Fox** : hunts for prey far outside its own haunts ; **started**, **hunted** : terms taken from hunting the hare etc ; the hunter being the **Spectator**, starting being taking up a subject, aud **hunting**, pursuing and finishing it.

Page 116.

Spring: suggest. **Whereas in town** : in the country the subjects for study being few in number. hunting becomes easy, *i.e.*, subjects can well be dealt with ; but in towns, as there are many subjects, one subject crosses another, like one animal crossing another in a place full of game, the hunting dog loses its scent aud feels puzzled, the author does not know whether to follow this subject or that and in this confusion, no subject is satisfactorily dealt with.

Foil ; counteract ; **inquisitive** : eager to know more about ; **my love etc** : note here the three traits of Spectator's character : (1) wanting to be left alone, (2) reservedness and (3) peculiar way of life. and there are aasociated with modesty or melancholy.

Conjurer : one who is good in magic, for the Spectator is reserved and alone, as the magicians are. **cunning**: special meaning, a man possessed of the skill to drive away the devil etc. from other people ; **white witch** : not a dark witch which does evil things, but a **white** : or harmless wizard ; **party** : political opinion; **a jesuit** : a member of the **Society of Jesus** : these were Catholics ; it was commonly believed that Jesuits entertained dangerous ideas against those who were not of their religion.

Page 117.

Account : be brought to the court and give a deposition regarding particulars of his life ; **imposed upon :** deceived ; **designing** : cunning : **promiscuously :** indifferently. *i. e.* without making any difference one subject being quite good as another ; **discarded** : given up by the party as useless ; **out of place :** not in his own place or circle of politicians. **hoot and hollow :** cry cut in a big voice hollow=hallao : cry ; **do not hold** etc : I keep quiet with a purpose.

Who does not.......... ; see the compliment paid by the Spectator to the country people (1) they are merry (2) have friendly feelings to their neighbours. **A man** etc : the Spectator ; he is no social being who becomes peevish at seeing a guest, or a friend dropping into his house for a chat, but wants to be left for himself and his hobbies ; **to get into the crowd to be left alone :** paradox : a man can do whatever he chooses, when in a crowd he is left unnoticed, as each is for his own business, and one cannot see all.

Page 118.

Advantage of company etc : the one peculiarity of town or crowded life is, if one chooses company he can have it in plenty, and also if one wants to be left for himself, others having their own business, will leave him alone; **picking up daisies**: townsmen when they go for the country, everything about it is so interesting, they do these several things: **cursedly**: much; **Cock and a Bull**: fanciful: got up from imagination; the humour is both literal and figurative; country suggests only commonplace talk like the Cock or the Bull; **figurative**: wild stories, without much probability: **confoundedly**: disgustingly; **service**: our services to the Knight, or our regards: **Cock of the club,** same as the **Cock of the walk**: important person, or one who pretends it; **commonwealth's**: republican in ideas. See that in this short letter how towns people have no sympathy for the beauties of country life, and in politics too hate the **conservatives**: who are for old way of government.

XXIX.

STEELE.] **[132.**

> That man may really be called impertinent, who without considering the circumstances of time, appropriates the conversation for himself, or makes himself the subject of his conversation, or pays no attention to the tastes of the company he is in.

Page 119.

Stage coach: before railroads were laid, it is coaches which travelled stage by stage that did much traffic work. **chamberlain**: the servant in charge of the several rooms intended for the people lodging in the inn. **Mrs**; is the abbreviation of mistress; so also **Miss**: but here used for an unmarried lady; **Miss** would be the proper term; **Betty**:

shortened form of Elizabeth ; **Arable** : land fit for cultivation ; **hence** : a lady who is a great landed proprietress ; **recruiting** : one who secures people for the army ; **quick set** : a living plant ; planted commonly for hedges ; here a man lively, but only acting as a fence and no more ; **Ephraim** ; a biblical personage ; well fitted for a clergyman ; **Quaker** : a sect of extreme protestants called also the **Society of Friends** : serious in their ways and views ; **studied himself dumb** : an apt description of Spectator. **intelligence**: news. **called**: roused from sleep. **liable to be disputed with** : not giving occasion to be found fault with; **half pike** : a short lance. **Equipage** : attendant ; now restricted to the goods taken with a person ; **loud** : note the humour here, in the names and descriptions given of the passengers, and the drummer being as talkative as his drum being noisy ; **invidious** : envious, here offensive. **to look sharp** : military term to take care. Here the author gives the lofty superiority assumed by military men, as if others were nothing to them ; **jumbled** : thrown into confusion by the shake of the carriage ; if this process is too often repeated in a bad carriage on a bad road, the passengers could hold nobody responsible, and sometime after become calmly settled to their position.

Page 120.

Frankness : military people are usually blunt and straightforward ; **desertion** : technical term for soldiers running away from their posts ; **to end his warfare** : to give up fighting, if he had the luck to marry the mother or the daughter ; **impudent** : here frank and straight forward ; **soldier of fortune** : a soldier who fights where fortune leads him ; here a man anxious to have a share of the fortune of the mother or the daughter. **vain** : empty. **to fall asleep** :

here the poor Spectator who could not stand this impudence, was forced to go to sleep or pretend it. **Sly saint**: a hit against quakers who were cunning though they pretended as if they werevery religious. **if I have the giving her**: if it lies in my power to bestow her. **savoureth of folly**: has all the taste of a foolish person. **light**: thoughtless and therefore trifling. **is a type**: typifies or signifies. **verily**: truly. See how often the term. **friend**: is used in this speech of the clergyman, consistent with the principles of his society; **society of Friends**.

Page 121.

Take advantage etc: taking advantage of your position as a military officer, meddle with us who are a peaceful set of people. **quarter**: mercy; a good soldier shows it to the fallen enemy. **fleer**: ridicule. **as an outrage**: as an insult against one, who of her sex, cannot challenge you for a duel. **hasped up**: shut up in a manner as not to be able to be freed. **assaulting**; technical law term, to cause injury to either to body or mind. **happy**: not feeling sorry, but feeling glad at the speech uttered against him. **convicted and support**: though convinced, yet pun on impudence. **faith and friend**: terms borrowed from Quaker Phraseology. **smoky**: experienced in finding out who is who. **myself airs**: assume a lofty importance. **soured by this little ruffle**: disturbed by this small cause for misunderstanding. **provinces**: duties. **taking place**: taking the proper place, i.e., advantageous position of the road.

Page 122.

There is no ordinary: note the seriousness of the speech. Steele, of a purpose, gives a specimen of the sentiment and style of the speech of the quakers. Note also the friendly advice contained in this speech free from anger or hatred. **vaunt** : pride. **the rather** : choose to. **peradventure** : perhaps. **modes and apparel** : it is not the dress that makes the man.

ADDISON.] [No. 269.

XXX.

"Our simplicity is brought to us again"

In this essay are brought out some new peculiarities of Sir Roger, revealed by his observations, during his visit to the town.

Page 123.

Grey's inn walks : a fashionable place for walk in the Stuart period ; the garden owes its existence to Lord Bacon. **Prince Eugene,** 1663-1736 ; An Italian Prince who served as a great fighter in three countries ; in Austria, England and Spain. In England he joined the Duke of Marlborough in the Spanish Succession War. Being a tory in politics naturally Sir Roger is attached to him. **Curiosity** : strong attachment. **Scandenburg** : an Albanian prince, held as captive by the Turks, becomes by compulsion a Mahomedan, escapes from their custody ; renounces Islam, and puts up strong fight against the Turks ; **Scandenburg** : is compounded of too words Alexander Beg : Pasher Alexander. **hemming** : clearing his throat. **not a little pleased** : see the peculiarity of this country gentleman taking long draughts of good air in towns, where it is much wanting. **hear my friend** : again another peculiarity ; though like the preacher of Goldsmith, he took people to task for their idle ways, yet did not withhold charity.

Page 124.

Willing to lay an obligation : make me do some pleasant work for which I should feel obliged to him. **mark** : 13s. 4d. **fob** : a small pocket. **tobacco stopper** : a small plug to stir or to press down tobacco in a pipe, very necessary for smokers. Students should observe how Sir Roger says something peculiar to the several people of the country, with whom the Spectator came into contact during his stay in the country with Sir Roger. **good principles** : Tory political opinions. **tribulation** : trouble. **the wind was so very high** : high winds, which Sir Roger superstitiuosly believes, indicating the effect of the death of the witch. **But for my own part** : ashamed to confess his superstition, he says this **laudable** : praiseworthy. **chines** : sides of pork or pigmeat. **cards** : Christmas greetings. **dad** : dreary. **gambols** : amusements.

Page 125.

Small : thin ; in the book read. **setitarunning** : as set it a running ; keep it flowing. **mince-pie** : a pasty sweet preparation made of pieces of meat mixed with spices, raisins etc. **smutting** : blackening ; a trick played by people who participate in Christmas amusements ; compare Goldsmiths "Smutted face" in the **Deserted Village; roguish** : cunning and mischievous. This christmas keeping should be compared with that of Washington Irving, who evidently owed his ideas to the Spectator Papers.

The late act i.e., **the act of the occsional conformity** passed in 1710 A.D. By this act the privilege of those Dissenters to conform to the doctrines of the High Church to enable them to hold office under the crown was taken away. This was passed by the Tory Parliament.

Hence Sir Roger as a good Tory feels glad about it. **securing**: safeguarding; strengthening. **Plumb porridge**: a delicacy that was shunned by the puritanical Christians. The fact that the Dissenter ate it with relish shows, how the Dissenters were converted to the High Church faith or became Tories in politics. **dispatched**: disposed of by discussion.

Gathering..............seriousness: becoming very serious. **Pope's procession**: when people suspected King Charles II to be inclined to encourage the Catholic faith, the dissenters in protest, got up processions parading the effigry of the Pope, and burned it every November 17th, the day of the Coronation of Elizabeth, who did much to put down Catholicism, Sir Andrew as a whig would naturally join the party opposed to Tories, who supported the king. **wary**: cautious; another trait of the Spectator. **stand**: an advantageous place to view a procession.

Page 126.

Baker's Chronicle: the only book of history which Sir Roger De Coverley knew. It was a short history of England from the earliest times to James the 1st 1605, written by Sir Richard Baker, 1558-1645. **Squire's**: a coffee house near the Gray's Inn. **high table**: place reserved for the gentry. **supplement**: a newspaper of the times. **could come at**: could have; again notice another trait of Sir Roger of being loved even by the inn boys or waiters.

XXXI.

ADDISON.] **[No. 329.**

With Ancus and with Numa, Kings of Rome
We must get down into the quiet tomb.

ruffled : annoyed. **trepanned** : caught in a trap. **good humour** : the good Sir Roger was never for long angry ; such a forgiving soul was he. **Edward III's sword** : the mighty seven feet sword of Edward III, with which he conquered France, and made it in the Hundred Years' War, a subject State of England. **pommel** : the handle. **Black Prince** : the name given to Edward III's son, who ruled as his father's deputy over the southern portion of France.

Page 130.

Edward the confessor : so called because of his saintly ways. It was he who promised Norman William the throne of England. **touched for the evil** is the glandular swelling of the neck, called, the king's evil, because it was believed till the time of George the III or the 18th century, the king's touching the affected part could cure the desease. Dr. Johnson was so touched by Queen Anne in 1716. **Henry the IV** : the first Lancastrian King. **casualties** : events. **one of our kings** : Henry the V, son of Henry the IV. One of the bravest of the English Kings. **beaten silver** : solid silver. **some Whig** : because the whigs were opposed to the king's privileges ; the Tory prejudice of Sir Roger. **lock up your kings** : see the dramatic irony of Sir Roger ; wanting the kings to be locked up, that is their statues, when he was all along for restricted powers to them. **shining** : showing his great knowledge ; **in him** : in his head or in his book. **Norfolk Buildings** : so called of their being situate in Norfolk Street.

This essay is important because of its bringing out the several pleasing and humorous traits of Sir Roger's character.

BUDGELL.] **[No. 331**

"Shows his beard for you to pluck."

Page 131

Patriarch : chief father, and hence an old venerable gentleman; **smock faced**: smock is a woman's under garment, and hence a man but with the soft face of a woman. **Abrahams** and **Isaacs** ; the great venerable man of the Old Testament days. **Tapestry** : woven hangings of wool and silk, often enriched with faces of men, landscape or beasts, covering the walls of ancient houses, or churches. **beards below the girdles** : beards hanging right up to the waist.

Again this is a peculiarity of Sir Roger to make men to take to beard and whisker growing, which evidently in Addison's days was going out of fashion; **metamorphoses:** changes. **Professorship of Philosophy** : This duty particularly would require one to be venerable looking with a grave face and a beard. **Zoilus** : is the name given to Dennis the critic, and Theobald the commentator of Shakespeare. This criticism was drawn by Aelian or Thomas Parnell, 1679—1718 at the request of the members of the Scriblerus Club. **no hair upon his head** : so as to look bald, and hence a wise old man.

Page 132.

Suckers : technical term, applied to such organs, which draw or suck away the blood or nourishment, more useful to the growth of the other parts of the organism. **Effigy** : image or likeness; **ruffle** : derangement disorder. **Mustachoes** : mustachios or moustache; **Recompose** : put them in order; **Heptarchy** : or the seven kingdoms established by the Jutes, Angles and Saxons. **Cardinal Poole and Bishop gardner:** two of the most eminent English clergymen of the reign of Queen Marry 1552—1556.

Page 133.

Persecutors: for they, under the direction of the Catholic Queen put down mercilessly Protestants. **Hudibras:** the comic work of Butler, Samuel (1600—1680). **Posterity:** coming generations; **dye:** color; where the natural color was wanting, artificial dyes were used: **beguile:** deceive about its naturalness; **Whey:** pale white; **expiration:** going out, or disappearance; **under twenty guineas:** would cost as much as twenty guineas; **come into the mode:** adopt the fashion of wearing beards; **take the air:** their exercise.

Page 134.

XXXIII.

ADDISON.] **[No. 335.**

It is from the original of human life or Nature,
that we draw our inferences or make copies.

This essay has all the interest of the previous essay, that is more traits of Sir Roger's character are brought to view.

The new tragedy: The distressed mother by Ambrose Philips (1671—1749), which in itself was an adaptation of Racine's **Andromach.** **The committee:** a play by Sir Robert Howard ridiculing the Puritans; **Church of England Comedy:** see Sir Roger's prejudice; he attended the play because it gave great fun to those of the High Church, and it was written at the expense of puritans. **Hector:** the great Trojan hero, and the son of Priam; **At**

the end of the Dictionary: a humorous reference Sir Roger's poor knowledge; he learnt something of Hector at the end of the book, where in the appendix some notes were given of these great men and other important matters.

The mohocks: The American novelist Fennimore Cooper gives an excellent description of these North American Red Indians in his several novels. Just as these were savage, so also bands of lawless people who infested the streets of London were called mohocks; **black men**: because by paint they disguised their faces; **mended**: adjusted by walking faster; **put on**: increased the distance by walking fast; **Honest**: Tory; **dogged**: pursued perhaps here means **dodged**: deceived; **threw them out**: got out of them; metaphor from hunting, where give up pursuit by losing scent of the quarry. **doubled the corner**: turned the corner; **forewheels mended**: Sir Rogar was particularly anxious about the sound condition of the coach; hence his examining the axle tree etc: so rickety were carriages then, and so bad the roads roo. **Captain Sentry**: the Captain who can keep good watch; a member of the Spectator Club, and also one to succeed to Sir Roger's property. **battle of Steenkirk**: a battle in which William the III defeated the French in 1692: see the humour here of the Captain boasting of a sword used so long ago, and one that should have become rusty. **oaken plants**: stout oak sticks; **stood up**: an oddity with Sir Roger; compare his standing up in the church during service; **seasoned**: becoming matured or full of Sir Roger's magnanimity was such he wanted to see all the world feel happy. **Pit**: unlike now, the pit then meant the best place reserved like **sofas** and **boxes** for the higher class; **that he made a proper center** (centre): that he was the best central figure who could not but attract the attention; for so commanding and venerable was he; **tragic audience**: people who have come to witness a tragedy.

Pyrrhus: who with Ulysses did much by stratagem to defeat the Trojans. He killed Priam their king, and was given the widow Andromache, wife of Hector, for his share. He was the son of Achilles.

Page 136.

King of France: Louis XIV, the greatest King of his time in Europe. His Court was as magnificent as himself; **strut:** dignified and now pompous gait; **natural criticism**: note here the compliment paid by the Spectator, who was no mean critic himself to the free, frank and sensible criticism of Sir Roger regarding either the play or the acting. It was not the result of book learned knowledge; **how the play would end**: delicate irony showing the great concern of Sir Roger in the fate of widows: for Andromache and Hermione, wife of Pyrrhus became or were wldows; one=at one time; **what would become of Pyrrhus:** whether he would share the same as the Knight himself at the hands of the fair widows.

Hermione: daughter ot Menelaus and Helen; wife of Pyrrhus, and after he was killed by his rival Orestes, she married the Victor, in fulfilment of the promise once made by her father to him.

In this paragraph, the readers would easily see the abject plight of Sir Roger, as evidenced by his concern in the doing of widows, and in those who have the misfortune, like himself, to love them. **Pyrrhus his:** Pyrrhus's, as the 's was once believed to be a contraction of his; **should your**

people etc : It was the opinion of Sir Roger, that in serious plays, like tragedies, the speeches should be clothed in grand language, not to be easily understood by common people This was a hit against the Restoration plays, with their stilted language, under false notions of classicism- **Very luckily :** for the Spectator was not for committing himself to definite opinions. **Astyanax** : son of Hector.

Page 137.

A notable young baggage : a good looking but impertinent woman, because she threatened not to have anything to do with Pyrrhus. **Orestes** : son of the Greek General Agamemnon. He killed his mother for her killing his father and her husband out of a fit of anger for sacrificing their child Iphigenia to please the gods. **Struck in with them** : joined their conversation group. **Pylades** : nephew of Agamemnon. He helped his cousin Orestes to avenge his father's death.

The old fellow in whiskers=Phoenix, the minister of Pyrrhus; **wags** : mischievous people : **smoke the Knight:** make fun of the Knight : **Whispered** etc : so as not to allow him to keep talking to attract the attention and arouse the spirit of amusement of the wags ; **done upon the stage** : in the earlier periods of stage acting, such scenes were avoided, because of the impossibility of staging ; **as if he saw something :** the ghost of his father haunting his mind for his having killed his own parent : **first** and **last** : to avoid crush.

XXXIV.

BUDGELL.] [**No. 359.**

Page 138.

"The greedy lioness the wolf pursues
The wolf the kid, the wanton kid the thyme."

This essay fully brings out the love affairs of Will Honeycomb, the fashionable dandy. **jogged** : gave a slight push to draw his attention ; **lay him** : to bet with him ; **brown study** : abstracted mood ; deep reverie ; **once in his life** : shows how, except for this occasion, he would never allow his opponent in politics to be right ; **fullness of his heart** : from the depth of his heart ; seriously sincere. **Sir David Dumdrum :** here used as a name appropriate to a Whig, hateful in the eyes of the Knight, who was as useless a drum which is not fit for sounding ; **half a year older** : humorous reference to the simplicity of Sir Roger to think as if 6 months difference in age counts for much in a woman's estimation : or his vanity that he is younger ; **particular province** : special feature of his character : **jaunty** : affected ; **to pin** : to make it rest or depend ; to fix.

Page 139.

Turned of threescore : passed his sixtieth year ; **settling in it** : to live a settled life as a married man ; **boarded with a Surgeon** : had arranged for my food with a Surgeon ; hence the suspicion that I had contracted some disease to stay with him : **old Put** : slang for a nasty fellow: **attacked her so briskly** : carried my love affairs pretty vigorously ; **waited upon her** : approached to let me know my chances in love ; **what was............it** : what money of my own I could add to hers ; *i.e.*, she knew I had none, and hence I stood no chance of her marrying me. **Lion's Inn:** a Law Court ; **Rebuffed**: repulsed ; **overture** : her proposal to add my wealth to hers ; **to break the matter** ; to inform him of my love to his daughter, and my monetary condition : the idiomatic expression **to break** is now used in communicating only **bad** news ; **spindle pair of legs :** legs long and lean like the stick on which thread is spun; **made a breach**: figure of speech taken from attacks delivered against forts, here the hearts of ladies, and the impression made in them: **old people on my side**: this clearly shows however giddy the girls might be to be carried away by the fashionable airs of Will Honeycomb, the prudent parents knowing his want of wealth would not allow their daughters to have anything to do with him; **old woman**: this shows the desperate straits to which poor Will was driven; **flying colours**: metaphor from victorious battlefield, when the army does not allow its flag to fall into the hands of the enemies, triumphant; **pouring..........England**: shows the greed of relations to secure the property of the widow by pretending some nearness of blood; **hard frost**: died of the effects of a clill.

"Oh! Why did God"; This long quotation is from; **Paradise Lost.** Xth Book, Lines 888—908.

The reference is to the creation of women with all their loveliness, and also their defects, which draw men down; *e.g.* Adam being driven from Paradise owing to Eve.

Page 141.

Fair defect: this fairness of body, but with serious defects of character: **as angels**: as in Angels, there is no female angel; **had not**: would not have: **strait conjunction**: union with women. which brings trouble to man; **through her perverseness**: as in the case of poor Sir Roger, the perverse widow would not care to return his love; **far worse**: like the Butler in the case of Miss Jenny; or Sir David Dumdrums in the case of Sir Roger; **fell adversary**: wicked enemy who is the object of one's hatred or shame; **confound**: destroy; **fold down a lea** dogear the leaf for his reference, as every reference woman in this passage, fits with his own fate.

XXXV.

ADDISON.] **[No. 3**

" A splendied garden, but viciously kept."

Bounces: knocks: **the philosopher**: a play reference to the Spectator.

Trimmed the boat with his coachman: made boat of even weight by seating his clergyman at a pro place. **Served for a ballast**: material dumped int ship or railway carriage, so as not to make it swing this and that, and perhaps upset it; a drunken man would danger as he would never keep to his place or stead his movements. Butlers are notoriously drunkards. **Hogue**: the battle fought at this place in France, in w the French were defeated by the combined forces of English and the Dutch in 1692. **In the triumph of heart etc**: The Tories are staunch Englishmen, and the Knight talks in a language of exaggeration the g ness of the English, and things English

Page 143.

Danger of Popery: As Louis the XIV had inter of converting England back to catholicism by ren help to the Pretenders, sons of the deposed King Jam **London Bridge** is famous both for its constructio number of buildings that exists on it, the crimes tha often committed. It figures largely in poetry too. **wonders** are (1) the hanging gardens of Babylon (

Pyramids of Egypt (3) the temple of Diana at Ephesus;(4) the amids of Egypt (5) the Colossus at Rhodes (6) The gold tue of Jupiter fashioned by Phidias and (7) the tower built Ptolemy in Egypt ; **honest**: excusable. **Scarce a eple**: Sir Roger being a Tory, and a strong churchman, urally would like to see steeples or church towers, which always absent in extreme protestant churches: **athenish:** unchristian; **mend**: improve; **making**: cting; **Knight of the Shire**: the chief parliamentary nber for the country; **Exercise of benevolence:** wing his excellent manners. **Thames ribaldry**: all vulgar talk coming from the low type of people engaged the wharves of the Thames. **Assuming a face of gistracy**: putting on all the seriousness of the face of nagistrate [humorously put]; **Middlesex justice**: a istrate of the shire in which London is.

e 144.

y water than by land: at all places to be respected. **e tribe**: all kinds of people (tribe) wandering t; **Mahomedan paradise**: according to the omedan belief, the place where the good departed souls l enjoy every kind of sensual pleasure, corresponding e **Swarga** of the Hindus; **Aviary**: haunt of birds: **tingale**: means night singer; its tone is both sweet nelancholic; so this kind of music appeals to lovers: or masque; is a woman with her face hidden, here a a of a low type of morality. **Displeased to be rupted**: shows the high type of morality of Sir Roger; **on baggage**: useless bad woman; **Oddness of the sage**: strangeness of the order, for waiters in hotels it to be degrading to their profession, to take the remainder of anything to servants ; **saucy** : impertinent ; **Ratified** : confirmed ; **peremptory** : authoritativ **quorum** : one of the Honorary Magistrates : **animadver** criticize : **strumpets** : low class women.

Page 145.

SPECTATOR 517.

This essay deals with a very painful subject—name the death of Sir Roger. It has been stated that Addis who wrote the majority of the essays dealing with S Roger loved his character so much that he did not want a other writer to murder Sir Roger. So he himself took the task of ringing the death knell of the child of his o fancy. In this essay we are given ample proof of the no generosity of the Squire. The motto of the essay is : Mir of ancient faith, undaunted worth, inviolable truth. It i loud and true proclamation of the goodness of Sir Roger.

Paragraph 1—**Very sensibly......us** : which filled with intense and keen grief and sorrow. **Country sessio** A meeting of the honorary magistrate called the Justice the Peace. **Promoting.........penning** : arguing that address which he himself composed must be adopt **Particular** : This detail that Sir Roger caught cold wh warmly promoting an address. **A whig** : As Sir Roger w a strong Tory in politics it may be that the whig's acco might not be true. **Justice of Peace** : An honorary mag trate. **The Chaplain** of the church in Sir Roger's villa **To the honour of** : which reflect much honour upon. **T** **butler etc** : Read essay No. 106.

Paragraph 2—**You was** : you were. **Country** : cou **Death** : the fatal cold. **Would go** : was very eager to

had lost.........stomach : He lost his appetite for roast
. **Sirloin** : A loin of beef. **Kept a good heart to**
last : was in very good spirits till death. **Widow** :
perverse widow who crossed him in love. **Gelding** : his
e. **You** : The Spectator. **Tenament** : a holding, a
se. **For weeping** : we were choked with grief and
d not speak. **Peremptorily** : authoritatively. **He**
de a very good end : He died in calmness and peace.
of the quorum : six honorary magistrates the collea-
of Sir Roger. **With heavy hearts** : In deep grief.
rize : wearing frieze coats. **Hall-house** : The chief
dential house of Sir Roger. **Wished......him** : blessed
that he may enjoy in happiness the estate bequeathed to
He had left as quit rents upon the estate ; he
made as the first charge upon his estate *i.e.*, the new
er must pay the legacies and gifts of charity before he
d appropriate to himself the estate and its yield.

Paragraph 3—**Not a dry eye** : all shed tears. **The**
of Uniformity : There were several acts of Unifor-
one in 1546 another in 1558 and a third in 1662. All
e prescribed the use of the Book of common Prayer in
nglish Churches.

[illegible]
Family
Medicine by Dr A F Wright
MD

KSUL
001762
KSUL